# THE COMMON ACCIDENCE

*Examined* and *Explained*,

BY

## *Short Questions & Answers*

According to the very Words of the

## BOOK.

Conducing very much to the Ease of the Teacher, and the Benefit of the Learner.

Being helpful to the better understanding of the *Rudiments* and *Grounds* of *Grammar*, Delivered in that and the like Introductions to the Latin Tongue.

Written heretofore, and made use of in *Rotheram* School, and now published for the Profit of Young Beginners in that and other SCHOOLS.

By *CHARLES HOOLE* Mr. of Arts, Lately Teacher of a private *Grammar-School* near the *Token-house* Garden in *Lothbury*, *London*.

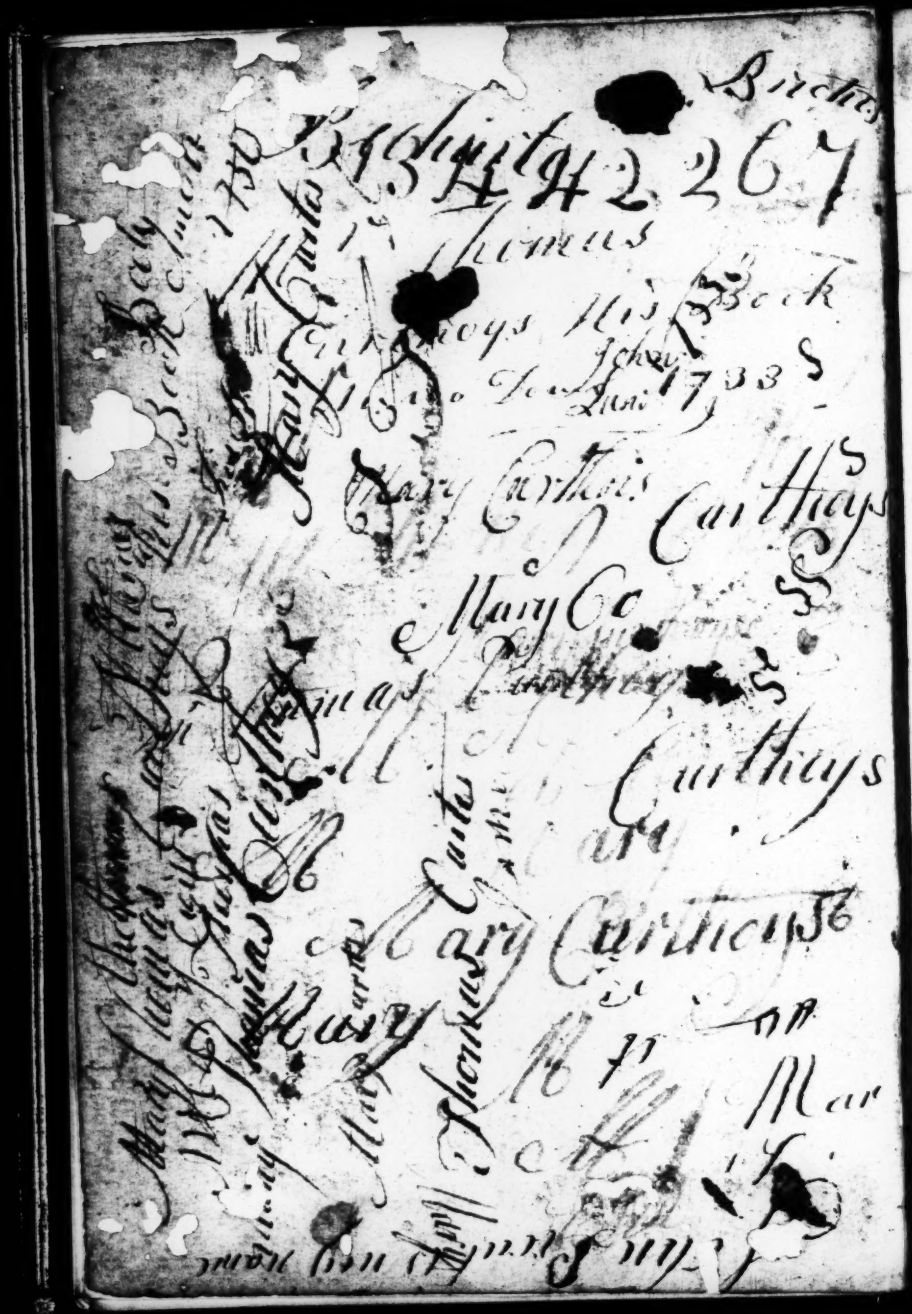
*The Eighth Edition, Corrected and Revised.*

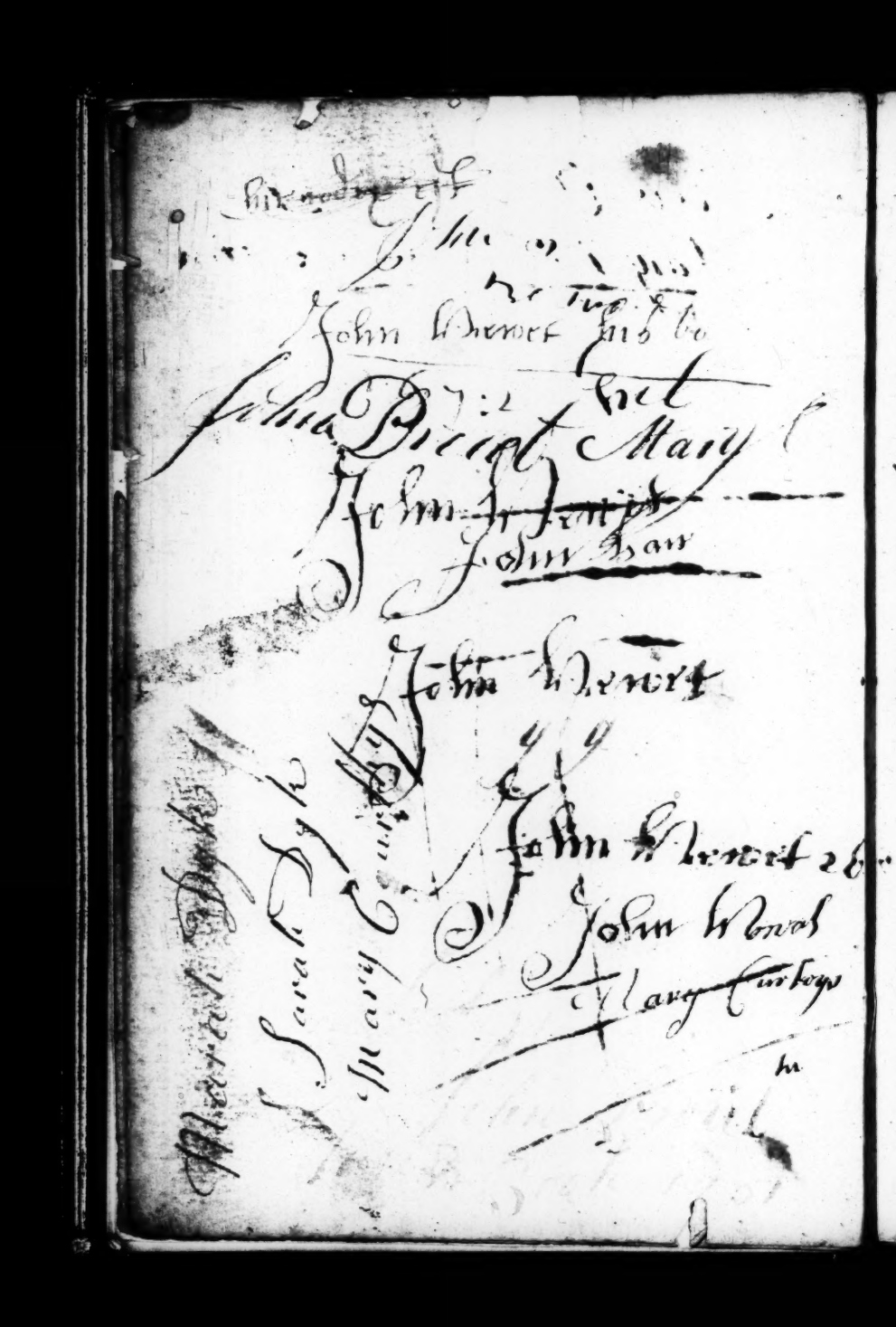
*LONDON:*
Printed by *A. Clark*, for *J. Clark*, and are to be sold at the Entrance into *Mercers Chappel* at the lower End of *Cheapside*. 1671.

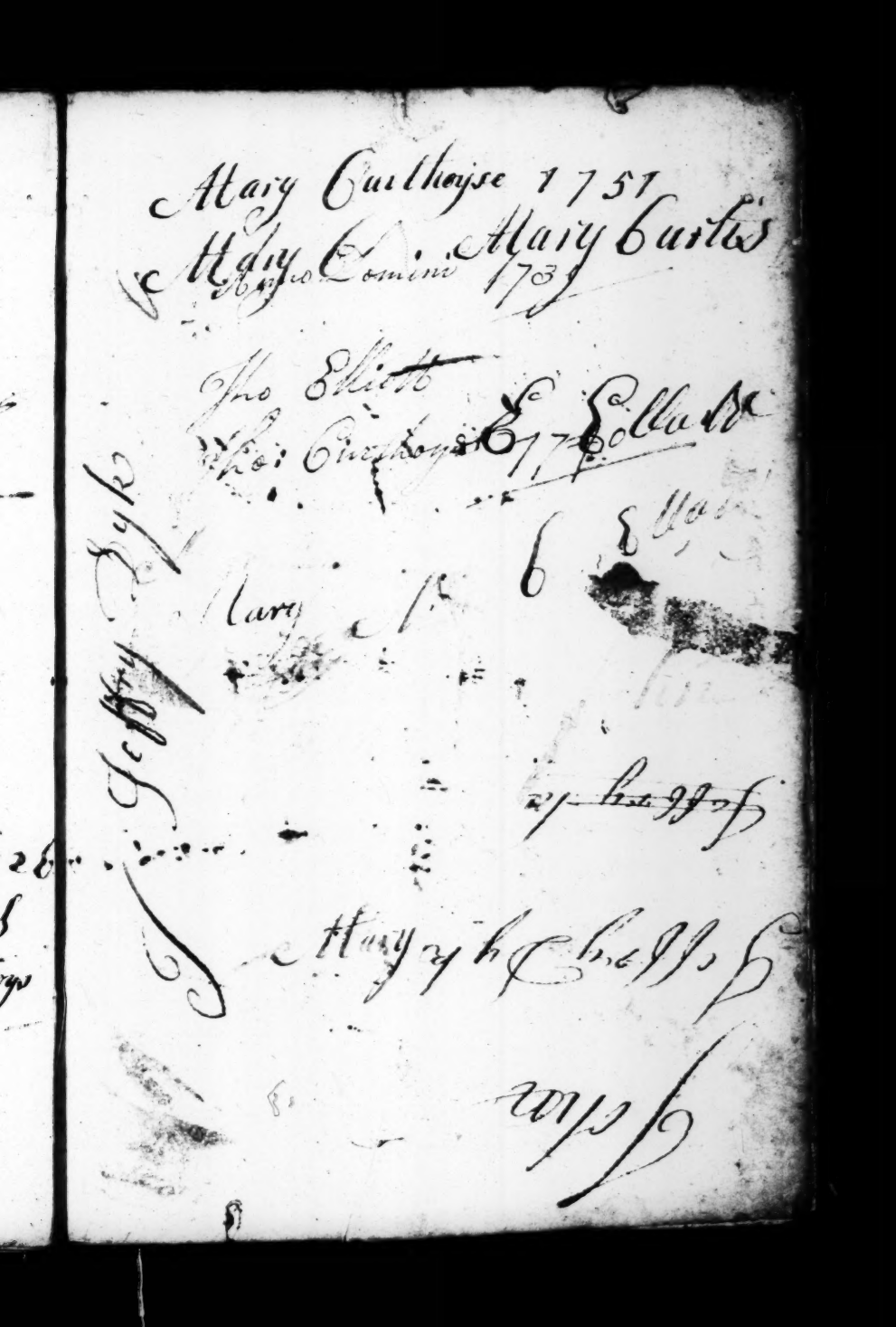
12035.de.31.

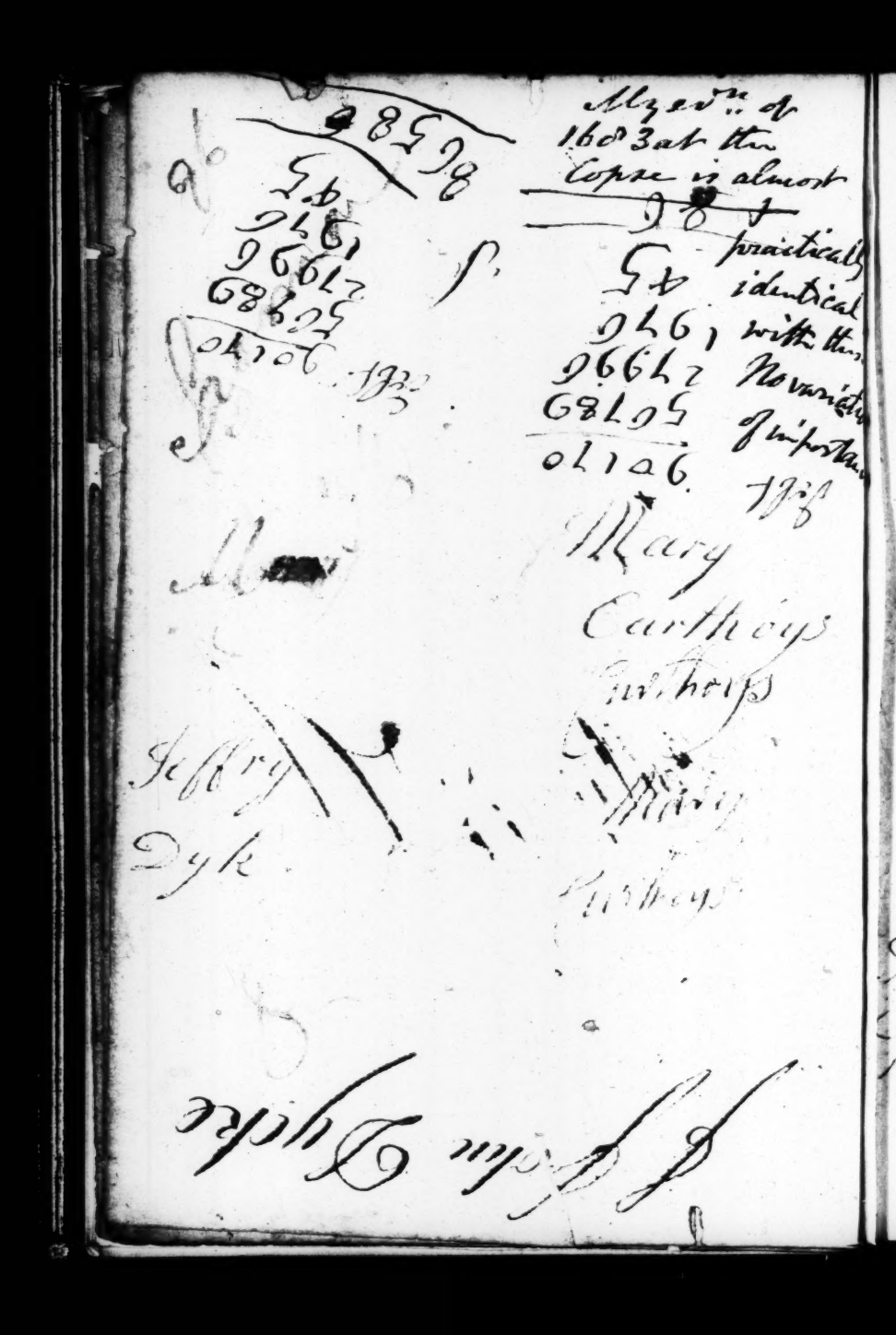
This is a very rare work amongst those of English grammars.

1565/3245









1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 John

John gbewitt is my neume
and with this pen I write
the seame but if my pen had
beene a lotle bettur I would
yo mend it iuore Lettur

Polley is my neame
and with this pen
I write
John

John
John
Prout

Polly

John Prout
Mary Cart

My dear Mary

Many a one
Have I called
Life my heart
Since I called
Life my heart
Many a one

My dear Mary

Many a one

Many a one

Many a one

# THE COMMON ACCIDENCE

*Examined* and *Explained*,

BY

## *Short Queſtions & Anſwers*

According to the very Words of the

## BOOK.

Conducing very much to the Eaſe of the Teacher, and the Benefit of the Learner.

Being helpful to the better underſtanding of the *Rudiments* and *Grounds* of *Grammar*, Delivered in that and the like Introductions to the Latin Tongue.

Written heretofore, and made uſe of in *Rotheram* School, and now publiſhed for the Profit of Young Beginners in that and other SCHOOLS.

By *CHARLES HOOLE* Mr. of Arts, Lately Teacher of a private *Grammar-School* near the *Token-houſe* Garden in *Lothbury*, *London*.

*The Eighth Edition, Corrected and Reviſed.*

*LONDON:*
Printed by *A. Clark*, for *J. Clark*, and are to be ſold at the Entrance into *Mercers Chappel* at the lower End of *Cheapſide*. 1671.

BRITISH MUSEUM

# The Introduction of the Eight Parts of SPEECH:

OR,

## The Firſt Part of the ACCIDENCE,

Examined and Explained,

By ſhort Queſtions and Anſwers.

### QUEST. I.

HOw many *Parts of Speech be there*?

*Anſw.* Eight.

Queſt. *Which are the eight Parts of Speech*?

*Anſw.* A Noun, a Pronoun, a Verb, a Participle, an Adverb, a Conjunction, a Prepoſition, an Interjection.

2. Q. *Which parts of Speech are declined*?

*A.* A Noun, a Pronoun, a Verb, a Participle.

Q. *Which parts of Speech are undeclined*?

*A.* An Adverb, a Conjunction, a Prepoſition, an Interjection.

---

### 1. Of a Noun.

3. Q. WHat *is a Noun*?

*A.* A *Noun* is the name of a thing that may be ſeen, felt, heard, or underſtood.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A.* The name of my hand in Latin is *manus*, the name of an houſe is *domus*, the name of goodneſs is *bonitas*.

Q. *How many ſorts of Nouns are there?*

*A.* Two.

Q. *Which be the two ſorts of Nouns?*

*A.* A Noun Subſtantive and a Noun Adjective.

Q. *What is a Noun Subſtantive?*

*A.* A Noun Subſtantive is that ſtandeth by it ſelf, and requireth not another word to be joyned with it to ſhew its ſignification.

Q. *Give an example of a Noun Subſtantive.*

*A.* *Homo* a man.

6. Q. *How is a Noun Subſtantive declined?*

*A.* With one Article; as, *Hic Magiſter* a Maſter, or elſe with two at the moſt; as, *Hic & hæc Parens*, a Father or Mother.

7. Q. *What is a Noun Adjective?*

*A.* A Noun Adjective is that cannot ſtand by it ſelf in reaſon or ſignification, but requires to be joyned with another word; as, *bonus* good, *pulcher* fair.

8. Q. *How is a Noun Adjective declined?*

*A.* Either with three terminations; as, *Bonus, bona, bonum*: or elſe with three Articles; as, *Hic, hæc & hoc Felix*, Happy; *hic & hæc levis, & hoc leve*, light.

9. Q. *How many ſorts of Nouns Subſtantives are there?*

*A.* Two.

Q. *Which are the two ſorts of Noun Subſtantives?*

*A.* Proper and Common.

Q. *What is a Noun Subſtantive proper?*

*A.* That which is proper to the thing that it betokeneth.

Q. *Give an example of a Noun Subſtantive proper.*

*Anſw.*

*A. Edwardus* is my proper name.

*Q. What is a Noun Subſtantive Common?*

*A.* That which is common to more.

Q. *Give an example of a Noun Subſtantive Common.*

*A. Homo* a man, is a common name to all men.

## Numbers of Nouns.

10. Qu. *HOw many numbers are there in Nouns?*

*A.* Two.

Q. *Which be the two Numbers?*

*A.* The Singular and Plural.

Q. *How know you the Singular number?*

*A.* The Singular number ſpeaketh but of one; as, *Lapis* a ſtone.

Q. *How know you the Plural Number?*

*A.* The plural number ſpeaketh of more than one; as *Lapides*, ſtones.

## Caſes of Nouns.

11. Q. *WIth how many Caſes are Nouns declined?*

*A. Nouns* be declined with ſix Caſes, Singularly and Plurally.

Q. *Which be the ſix Caſes?*

*A.* The *Nominative*, the Genitive, the Dative, the Accuſative, the Vocative, and the Ablative.

12. Q. *How know you the Nominative Caſe?*

*A.* The *Nominative* caſe cometh before the Verb, and anſwereth to the queſtion, *who* or *what*; as, *Magiſter docet*, the Maſter teacheth.

13. Q. *How know you the Genitive caſe?*

*A.* The Genitive caſe is known by this token *of*, and anſwereth to the Queſtion, *whoſe* or *whereof*; as, *Doctrina Magiſtri*, the learning of the Maſter.

14. Q. *How know you the Dative caſe?*

*Anſw.* The Dative caſe is known by this token *to*, and anſwereth to this queſtion, *to whom*, or *to what?* as, *Do librum Magiſtro*, I give a Book to the Maſter.

15. Q. *How know you the Accuſative caſe?*

*A.* The Acculative caſe followeth the Verb, and anſwereth to this Queſtion, *whom* or *what*; as, *Amo Magiſtrum*, I love the Maſter.

16. Q. *How know you the Vocative caſe?*

*A.* The Vocative caſe is known by calling or ſpeaking to: as, *ô Magiſter*, O Maſter.

17. Q. *How know you the Ablative caſe?*

*A.* The Ablative caſe is commonly joyned with Prepoſitions ſerving to the Ablative caſe: as, *De Magiſtro*, of the Maſter; *Coram Magiſtro*, before the Maſter.

Q *What words are ſigns of the Ablative caſe?*

*A.* In, with, through, for, from, by, and than, after the comparative degree.

---

## Articles.

18. Q. WHence *are the Articles borrowed?*

*Anſw.* Of the Pronoun.

Q. *How are Articles declined?*

*Anſw.* Thus.

Singula-

| | | Masc. | Fœm. | Neut. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. | *Hic.* | *Hæc.* | *Hoc.* |
| | Gen. | *Hujus.* | *Hujus* | *Hujus.* |
| | Dat. | *Huic.* | *Huic.* | *Huic.* |
| | Acc. | *Hunc.* | *Hanc.* | *Hoc.* |
| | Voc. | *ô.* | *ô.* | *ô.* |
| | Abl. | *Hoc.* | *Hac.* | *Hoc.* |

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Pluraliter | Nom. | *Hi.* | *Hæ.* | *Hæc* |
| | Gen. | *Horum.* | *Harum.* | *Horum.* |
| | Dat. | *His.* | *His.* | *His.* |
| | Acc. | *Hos.* | *Has.* | *Hæc.* |
| | Voc. | *ô.* | *ô.* | *ô.* |
| | Abl. | *His.* | *His.* | *His.* |

## Genders of Nouns.

19. Q. *How many Genders of Nouns be there?*
*Answ.* Seven.

Q. *Which be the seven Genders?*

*Answ.* The Masculine, the Feminine, the Neuter, the Common of two, the Common of three, the Doubtful, and the Epicene.

Q. *With what Articles is the Masculine Gender declined?*

*A.* With this Article *Hic*; as, *Hic vir*, a man.

Q. *With what Article is the Feminine Gender declined?*

*A.* With this Article *Hæc*; as, *Hæc mulier* a woman.

Q. *With what Article is the Neuter Gender declined?*

*A.* With this Article *Hoc*; as, *Hoc ſaxum*, a ſtone.

Q. *With what Articles is the Common of two Gender declined?*

A. With the Articles *Hic & hæc*; as, *Hic & hæc Parens*, a Father or Mother.

Q. *With what Articles is the Common of three Gender declined?*

A. With the Articles *Hic, hæc, & hoc*; as, *Hic, hæc, & hoc Felix* happy.

Q. *With what* Articles *is the Doubtful Gender declined?*

A. With the Articles *Hic*, or *hæc*; as, *hic vel hæc dies*, a day.

Q. *With how many* Articles *is the Epicœne Gender declined?*

A. With one Article, and under that one Article both kinds are ſignified; as, *Hic Paſſer* a Sparrow, *Hæc Aquila* an Eagle, both he and ſhe.

---

## The Declenſions of Nouns.

20. Qu. *How many Declenſions of Nouns are there?*

*Anſw.* There be five Declenſions of Nouns.

Q. *When is a Noun of the firſt Declenſion?*

*A.* When the Genitive and Dative caſe ſingular end in *æ*, the Accuſative in *am*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *a*. The Nominative plural in *æ*, the Genitive in *arum*, the Dative in *is*, the

the Accuſative in *as*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *is*.

Q. *What is the example of the firſt Declenſion?*

*A. Muſa*, a Song.

Q. *Decline* Muſa.

*Anſ.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *hæc Muſ-a.* | Pluraliter | Nom. *hæ Muſ-æ* |
| | Gen. *hujus Muſ æ* | | Gen. *harum Muſ-arum.* |
| | Dat. *huic Muſ-æ.* | | Dat. *his Muſ-is.* |
| | Acc. *hanc Muſ-am.* | | Acc. *has Muſ-as.* |
| | Voc. *ô Muſ-a.* | | Voc. *ô Muſ æ:* |
| | Abl. *hac Muſ-a.* | | Abl. *his Muſ-is.* |

21. Qu. *What Nouns of the firſt Declenſion make the Dative and Ablative caſe plural in* is *or in* abus.

*A. Filia* a daughter, and *Nata* a daughter.

Q. *What Nouns of the firſt Declenſion make the Dative and Ablative caſe plural in* abus *only?*

*A. Dea* a Goddeſs, *Mula* a Mule, *Equa* a Mare, and *liberta* a freed woman.

22. Q. *When is a Noun of the ſecond Declenſion?*

*A.* When the Genitive caſe ſingular endeth in *i*, the Dative in *o*, the Accuſative in *um*, the Vocative for the moſt part like the Nominative, the Ablative in *o*. The Nominative plural in *i*, the Genitive in *orum*, the Dative in *is*, the Accuſative in *os*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *is*.

23. Q. *What is the example of the ſecond Declenſion?*

*A.* Magiſter a Maſter.

Q. *Decline* Magiſter.

*Anſ.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *hic Magiſt-er* | Pluraliter | Nom. *hi Magiſtr-i.* |
| | Gen. *hujus Magiſtr-i* | | Gen. *horum Magiſtr-orum.* |
| | Dat. *huic Magiſtr-o* | | Dat. *his Magiſtr-is.* |
| | Acc. *hunc Magiſtr-um* | | Acc. *hos Magiſtr-os.* |
| | Voc. *ô Magiſt-er* | | Voc. *ô Magiſtr-i* |
| | Abl. *hoc Magiſtr-o* | | Abl. *his Magiſtr-is.* |

24. Q.

24. Q. *When the Nominative endeth in* us, *how ſhall the Vocative end?*

*A.* In *e*; as, *Nominativo hic Dominus*, a Lord, *Vocativo ô Domine.*

Q. *What Nouns in* us *are excepted?*

*A. Deus* God, that maketh Voc. *ô Deus*; and *Filius* a Son, that maketh *ô Fili.*

25. Q. *When the Nominative endeth in* ius, *if it be the proper name of a man, how ſhall the Voc. end?*

*A.* In *i*; as Nom. *Hic Georgius*, George, Voc. *ô Georgi.*

26. Q. *What Nouns make their Vocative caſe in* e, *or in* us?

*A.* Theſe following, *viz. Agnus* a Lamb, *lucus* a grove, *vulgus* the common people, *populus* people, *chorus* a quire, *fluvius* a floud.

27. Q. *What caſes have all Nouns of the Neuter Gender (of what Declenſion ſoever they be) alike in both Numbers?*

*A.* The Nominative, the Accuſative, and the Vocative.

Q. *How do all theſe caſes end in the Plur. Number?*

*A.* In *a.*

28. Q. *What is the Example of Nouns of the Neuter Gender in the ſecond Declenſion?*

A. *Regnum* a Kingdom.

29. Q. *Decline* Regnum.

*Anſw.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *hoc Regn-um* | Pluraliter | Nom. *hæc Regn-a* |
| | Gen. *hujus Regn-i* | | Gen. *horum Regn orum* |
| | Dat. *huic Regn-o* | | Dat. *his Regn-is* |
| | Acc. *hoc Regn-um* | | Acc. *hæc Regn-a* |
| | Voc. *ô Regn-um* | | Voc. *ô Regn-a* |
| | Abl. *hoc Regn-o* | | Abl. *his Regn-is.* |

30 Q. *What*

30. Q. *What Nouns make the Neuter Gender in o?*
*A. Ambo* both, and *Duo* two.
Q. *Decline* Ambo.
*Anſw.*

Pluraliter

Nom. *Ambo, ambæ, ambo.*
Gen. *Amborum, ambarum, amborum.*
Dat. *Ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.*
Acc. *Ambos, ambas, ambo.*
Voc. *Ambo, ambæ, ambo.*
Abl. *Ambobus, ambabus, ambobus.*

Q. *How is* Duo *declined?*
*A.* Like *Ambo.*
31. Q. *When is a Noun of the third Declenſion?*
*A.* When the Genitive caſe ſingular endeth in *is*, the Dative in *i*, the Accuſative in *em*, and ſometimes in *im*, and ſometimes in both; the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *e*, and ſometimes in *i*, and ſometimes in both *e* and *i*; the Nominative plur. in *es*, the Gen. in *um*, and ſometimes in *ium*, the Dat. in *bus*, the Acc. in *es*, the Voc. like the Nom. the Ablat. in *bus*.
Q. *What are the examples of the third Declenſion?*
*A. Lapis* a ſtone, and *Parens* a Father or Mother.
Q. *Decline* Lapis.
*Anſw.*

Singulariter

Nom. *hic Lap-is.*
Gen. *hujus Lapid-is*
Dat. *huic Lapid-i.*
Acc *hunc Lapid-em*
Voc. *ô Lap-is.*
Abl. *hoc Lapid-e.*

Pluraliter.

Nom. *hi Lapid-es.*
Gen. *horum Lapid-um.*
Dat. *his Lapidi-bus.*
Acc. *hos Lapid-es.*
Voc. *ô Lapid-es.*
Abl. *his Lapidi-bus.*

Q. *De-*

Q. *Decline* Parens.

*Anſw.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *hic & hæc Parens.* | Pluraliter | Nom. *hi & hæ Parent-es* |
| | Gen. *hujus Parent-is.* | | Gen. *horum & harum Parent-um.* |
| | Dat. *huic Parent-i.* | | Dat. *his Parenti-bus.* |
| | Acc. *hunc & hanc Parent-em.* | | Acc. *hos & has Parent-es* |
| | Voc. *ô Parens.* | | Voc. *ô Parent-es.* |
| | Abl. *hoc & hac Parent-e.* | | Abl. *his Parent-ibus.* |

32. Q. *When is a Noun of the fourth Declenſion?*

*A.* When the Genitive caſe ſingular endeth in *us*, the Dative in *ui*, the Accuſative in *um*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *u*. The Nominative plural in *us*, the Genitive in *uum*, the Dative in *ibus*, the Accuſative in *us*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *ibus*.

Q. *What is the example of the fourth Declenſion?*

*A. Manus*, a hand.

Q. *Decline* Manus.

*Anſ.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Hom. *hæc Man-us.* | Pluraliter | Nom. *hæ Man-us.* |
| | Gen. *hujus Man-us.* | | Gen. *harum Man-uum.* |
| | Dat. *huic Man-ui.* | | Dat. *his Man-ibus.* |
| | Acc. *hanc Man-um.* | | Acc. *has Man-us.* |
| | Voc. *ô Man-us.* | | Voc. *ô Man-us.* |
| | Abl. *hac Man-u.* | | Abl. *his Man-ibus.* |

33. Q. *When is a Noun of the fifth Declenſion?*

*A.* When the Genitive and Dative caſe ſingular end in *ei*, the Accuſative in *em*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *e*. The Nominative Plural in *es*, the Genitive in *erum*, the Dative in *ebus*, the Accuſative in *es*, the Vocative like the Nominative, the Ablative in *ebus*.

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the example of the fifth Declenſion?*
A. Meridies, Noon-tide.
Q. *Decline* Meridies.
*Anſw.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *hic* Meridi-es. | Pluraliter | Nom. *hi* Meridi-es. |
| | Gen. *hujus* Meridi ei. | | Gen. *horum* Meridi-erum. |
| | Dat. *huic* Meridi-ei. | | Dat. *his* Meridi-ebus. |
| | Acc. *hunc* Meridi-em. | | Acc. *hos* Meridi-es. |
| | Voc. *ô* Meridi-es. | | Voc. *ô* Meridi-es. |
| | Abl. *hoc* Meridi-e. | | Abl. *his* Meridi-ebus. |

Q. *Of what Gender are all Nouns of the fifth Declenſion?*
A. Of the Feminine.
Q. *Which Nouns are excepted?*
A. *Meridies* Noontide, of the Maſculine; and *dies* a day, of the Doubtful.

## The declining of Adjectives.

34. Q. *How is a Noun Adjective of three terminations declined?*
A. After the firſt and ſecond Declenſion.
Q. *What is the example of Adjectives of three terminations?*
A. *Bonus* Good.
Q. *Decline* Bonus.
*Anſw.*

Singulariter
Nom. *Bonus, bona, bonum.*
Gen. *Boni, bonæ, boni.*
Dat. *Bono, bonæ, bono.*
Acc. *Bonum, bonam, bonum.*
Voc. *Bone, bona, bonum.*
Abl. *Bono, bona, bono.*

Nom.

Pluraliter
Nom *Boni, bonæ, bona.*
Gen *Bonorum, bonarum, bonorum.*
Dat. *Bonis, bonis, bonis.*
Acc. *Bonos, bonas, bona.*
Voc. *Boni, bonæ, bona,*
Abl. *Bonis, bonis, bonis.*

35 Q. *What Adjectives are there beſides theſe, of another manner of ſpeaking?*

*A.* Certain Adjectives which make their Genitive caſe ſingular in *ius*, and the Dative in *i*.

Q. *Which be thoſe Adjectives?*

*A.* Theſe that follow with their Compounds.

Q. *Decline* Unus, *one.*

*Anſw.*

Singulariter
Nom *unus, una, unum.*
Gen. *unius.*
Dat. *uni.*
Acc. *unum, unam, unum.*
Voc. *une, una, unum.*
Abl. *uno, una, uno.*

Pluraliter
Nom *uni, unæ, una.*
Gen. *unorum, unarum, unorum.*
Dat. *unis.*
Acc. *unos, unas, una.*
Voc. *uni, unæ, una.*
Abl. *unis.*

Q. *When hath* Unus, una, unum, *the Plural number?*

*A.* When it is joyned with a word that lacketh the ſingular; as, *unæ Literæ*, one Letter or Epiſtle, *una mœnia*, one City wall.

Q. *What*

Q. *What other Adjectives are declined in like manner?*

*A. Totus* whole, *ſolus* alone, *ullus* any, *alius*, *alter* another, *uter* whether, and *neuter* neither.

Q. *What caſe do theſe five laſt rehearſed lack?*

*A.* The Vocative.

36. Q. *How are the Adjectives of three Articles declined?*

*A.* After the third declenſion.

Q. *What are the Examples of Adjectives of three Articles?*

*A. Felix* happy, and *triſtis* ſad.

Q. *Decline* Felix.

*Anſw.*

Singulariter
Nom. *hic hæc & hoc Felix.*
Gen. *hujus Felicis.*
Dat. *huic Felici.*
Acc. *hunc & hanc Felicem, & hoc Felix.*
Voc. *ô Felix.*
Abl. *hoc hac & hoc Felice vel Felicî.*

Pluraliter
Nom. *hi & hæ Felices, & hæc Felicia.*
Gen. *horum harum & horum Felicium.*
Dat. *his Felicibus.*
Acc. *hos & has Felices, & hæc Felicia.*
Voc. *ô Felices, & ô Felicia.*
Abl. *his Felicibus.*

Q. *Decline* Triſtis.

*Anſw.*

Singulariter
Nom. *hic & hæc Triſtis, & hoc Triſte.*
Gen. *hujus Triſtis.*
Dat. *huic Triſti.*
Acc. *hunc & hanc Triſtem, & hoc Triſte.*
Voc. *ô Triſtis, & ô Triſte.*
Abl. *hoc hac & hoc Triſti.*

Pluraliter

Pluraliter
Nom. *hi & hæ Triſtes, & hæc Triſtia.*
Gen *horum harum & horum Triſtium.*
Dat. *his Triſtibus.*
Acc. *hos & has Triſtes, & hæc Triſtia.*
Voc. *ô Triſtes, & ô Triſtia.*
Abl. *his Triſtibus.*

## Compariſons of Nouns.

37. Q. *What Nouns may form Compariſon?*

A. Adjectives whoſe ſignification may increaſe, or be diminiſhed.

Q. *How many degrees of Compariſon are there?*

A. Three.

Q. *Which are the three degrees of Compariſon?*

A. The Poſitive, the Comparative, and the Superlative.

38. Q. *How know you the Poſitive degree?*

A. The Poſitive betokeneth the thing abſolutely without exceſs; as, *Durus* hard.

Q. *How know you the Comparative degree?*

A. The Comparative ſomewhat exceedeth his Poſitive in ſignification; as, *Durior* harder.

Q. *Whence is the Comparative degree formed?*

A. The Comparative degree is formed of the firſt caſe of the Poſitive that endeth in *i*, by putting thereto *or* and *us*.

Q. *Give ſome Examples.*

A. Of *Duri* is formed *hic & hæc durior, & hoc durius*; of *Triſti, hic & hæc triſtior, & hoc triſtius*; and of *Dulci, hic & hæc dulcior, & hoc dulcius.*

40. Q. *How know you the Superlative degree?*

A. The Superlative exceeds his Poſitive in the higheſt degree; as, *Duriſſimus* the hardeſt.

Q. *Whence*

Q. *Whence is the Superlative degree formed?*

*A.* The Superlative is formed of the firſt caſe of the Poſitive, that endeth in *i*, by putting thereto *ſſ* and *ſimus*.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A.* Of *Duri* is formed *Duriſſimus*, of *Triſti Triſtiſſimus*, and of *Dulci Dulciſſimus*.

Q. *What Adjectives are excepted from this general Rule?*

*A.* Theſe that follow, *Bonus* good, *melior* better, *optimus* beſt; *Malus* bad, *pejor* worſe, *peſſimus* the worſt; *Magnus* great, *major* greater, *maximus* the greateſt; *Parvus* little, *minor* leſs, *minimus* the leaſt; *Multus multa multum* much, *Plus* more, *Plurimus, plurima, plurimum*, very much.

42. Q. *If the Poſitive end in* er, *how is the Superlative formed?*

*A.* The Superlative is formed of the Nominative caſe, by putting to *rimus* as, *pulcher pulcherrimus*.

43 Q. *What Nouns in* lis *make the Superlative by changing* lis *in* limus.

*A.* Theſe; *Humilis* humble, *humilimus* very humble; *Similis* like, *ſimilimus* very like; *Facilis* eaſie, *facilimus* very eaſie; *Gracilis* ſlender, *gracilimus* very ſlender; *Agilis* nimble, *agilimus* very nimble; *Docilis* teachable, *docilimus* very teachable.

Q. *What do all other Nouns ending in* lis?

*A.* They follow the general Rules afore-going; as, *utilis* profitable, *utiliſſimus* very profitable.

44. Q. *How is an Adjective compared, if a Vowel come before us?*

*A.* By *magis* more, and *maximè* moſt; as, *pius* godly, *magis pius* more godly, *maximè pius* moſt godly; *aſſiduus*, continual, *magis aſſiduus* more continual, *maximè aſſiduus* moſt continual.

## Of the Pronouns.

1. Queſt. *What is a Pronoun?*

*Anſw.* A Pronoun is a part of Speech much like to a Noun, or, put in ſtead of a Noun.

Q. *How is a Pronoun uſed?*

*A.* In ſhewing or rehearſing.

2. Q. *How many Pronouns are there?*

*A.* Fifteen.

Q. *Which be the fifteen Pronouns?*

*A. Ego* I, *tu* thou, *ſui* of himſelf, or of themſelves, *ille* he, *ipſe* himſelf, *iſte* yond, *hic* this, *is* the, *meus* mine, *tuus* thine, *ſuus* his own, *noſter* ours, *veſter* yours, *noſtras* on our ſide, *veſtras* on your ſide.

3. Q. *Which Pronouns have the Vocative Caſe?*

*A.* Theſe four, *tu, meus, noſter* and *noſtras*, and all other lack the Vocative Caſe.

Q. *What Pronouns may be added to theſe?*

*A.* Their Compounds, *Egomet, tute*, and alſo *Qui, quæ, quod.*

4. Q. *What Pronouns be Primitive?*

*A.* Theſe Eight, *viz. Ego, tu, ſui, ille, ipſe, iſte, hic*, and *is.*

Q. *Why are they ſo called?*

*A.* Becauſe they be not derived of others.

Q. *How elſe are they called?*

*A.* Demonſtratives.

Q. *Why ſo?*

*A.* Becauſe they ſhew a thing not ſpoken of before.

5. Q. *Which Pronouns be called Relatives?*

*A.* Theſe ſix, *hic, ille, iſte, is, idem*, and *qui.*

Qu.

Q. *Why are they called Relatives?*

*A.* Becauſe they rehearſe a thing that was ſpoken of before.

6 Q. *Which Pronouns are Derivatives?*

*A.* Theſe ſeven, *meus, tuus, ſuus, noſter, veſter, noſtras* and *veſtras*.

Q. *Why are they called Derivatives?*

*A.* Becauſe they be derived of their Primitives, *viz. meus* of *mei*, *tuus* of *tui*, *ſuus* of *ſui*, *noſter* and *noſtras* of *noſtri*, *veſter* and *veſtras* of *veſtri*.

7. Q. *What things belong to a Pronoun?*

*A.* Theſe five, *viz.* Number, Caſe and Gender, (as are in a Noun) Declenſion and Perſon: as here followeth.

---

## The Declenſions of Pronouns.

8. Queſt. *How many Declenſions of Pronouns are there?*

*A.* Four.

9. Q. *Which Pronouns be of the firſt Declenſion?*

*A.* Theſe three, *Ego, tu, ſui.*

Q. *How is* Ego *declined?*

*Anſ.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *Ego.* | Pluraliter | Nom. *Nos.* |
| | Gen. *Mei.* | | G. *Noſtrum vel noſtri.* |
| | Dat. *Mihi* | | Dat. *Nobis.* |
| | Acc. *Me.* | | Acc. *Nos.* |
| | Vocativo *caret.* | | Vocativo *caret.* |
| | Abl. *Me.* | | Abl. *Nobis.* |

Q. *How is* Tu *declined?*
*Answ.*

| | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. | *Tu.* | Pluraliter | Nom. | *Nos.* |
| | Gen. | *Tui.* | | Gen. | *Noſtrum vel noſtri.* |
| | Dat. | *Tibi.* | | Dat. | *Nobis.* |
| | Acc. | *Te.* | | Acc. | *Nos.* |
| | Voc. | *Tu* | | Voc. | *Nos.* |
| | Abl. | *Te* | | Abl. | *Nobis.* |

Q. *How is* Sui *declined?*
*Anſw.*

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Singulariter and Pluraliter | Nominativo | *caret.* |
| | Gen. | *Sui.* |
| | Dat. | *Sibi.* |
| | Acc. | *Se.* |
| | Vocativo | *caret.* |
| | Abl. | *Se.* |

10. Qu. *What Pronouns be of the ſecond Declenſion?*

*A.* Theſe ſix, *Ille, ipſe, iſte, hic, is,* and *qui.*

Q. *Decline* Iſte.
*Anſ.*

| | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. | *Iſtè, iſta, iſtud* | Pluraliter | Nom. | *Iſti, iſtæ, iſta.* |
| | Gen. | *iſtius.* | | Gen. | *Iſtorum, iſtarum, iſtorum.* |
| | Dat. | *Iſti.* | | Dat. | *iſtis.* |
| | Acc. | *Iſtum, iſtam, iſtud* | | Acc. | *Iſtos, iſtas, iſta.* |
| | Voc. | *caret.* | | Vocativo | *caret.* |
| | Abl. | *iſto, iſta, iſto.* | | Abl. | *Iſtis.* |

Q. *How are* Ille *and* ipſe *declined?*

*A.* Like *iſte,* ſaving that the Neuter Gender of *ipſe* in the Nominative and the Accuſative caſe ſingular maketh *ipſum.*

Q. *How*

Q. *How is* Hic *declined* ?

*Anſ.*

Sing.
Nom. *Hic, hæc, hoc.*
Gen. *Hujus.*
Dat. *Huic.* &c. as before in a Noun.

Q. How *is* Is *declined* ?

*Anſ.*

| Singulariter | | Pluraliter | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Nom. | *Is, ea, id,* | Nom. | *Ii, eæ, ea.* |
| Gen. | *Ejus.* | Gen. | *Eorum, earum, eorum.* |
| Dat. | *Ei.* | Dat. | *Iis* vel *eis.* |
| Acc. | *Eum, eam, id.* | Acc. | *Eos, eas, ea.* |
| Voc. | *caret.* | Voc. | *caret.* |
| Abl. | *Eo, ea, eo.* | Abl. | *Iis* vel *eis.* |

Q. *How is* qui *declined* ?

*Anſ.*

| Singulariter | | Pluraliter | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Nom. | *Qui, quæ, quod.* | Nom. | *[illegible] quæ, quæ.* |
| Gen. | *Cujus.* | Gen. | *[illegible]rum, quarum, quorum.* |
| Dat. | *Cui.* | Dat. | *Quibus*, vel *queis.* |
| Acc. | *Quem, quam, quod.* | Acc. | *Quos, [illegible], quæ.* |
| Voc. | *caret.* | Voc. | *caret.* |
| Abl. | *Quo, qua, quo*, vel *qui.* | Abl. | *[illegible]queis.* |

Q. *What Pronouns are declined like* qui ?

*A.* *Quis* and *quid*, whether they be Interrogatives or Indefinites.

Q. *How is* quiſquis *declined* ?

*A.* Sing. Nom. { *Quiſquis.* / *Quicquid.* } Acc. { *Quic-* / *quid.* } Abl. { *Quoquo* / *Quaqua* / *Quoquo* }

11. Q. *What is* Quid *alwaies* ?

*A.* Subſtantive of the Neuter Gender.

Q. *What Pronouns are of the third Declenſion* ?

*A.* Theſe five, *Meus, tuus, ſuus, noſter*, and *veſter*.

Q. *How are they declined?*

A. Like Nouns Adjectives of three terminations.

Q. *How is* Meus *declined?*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Singulariter | Nom. *Meus, mea, meum.* | Pluraliter | Nom. *Mei, meæ, mea.* |
| | Gen. *Mei, meæ, mei.* | | Gen. *Meorum, mearum, meorum.* |
| | Dat. *Meo, meæ, meo,* | | Dat. *Meis.* |
| | Acc. *Meum, meam, meum* | | Acc. *Meos, meas, mea.* |
| | Voc. *Mi, mea, meum.* | | Voc. *Mei, meæ, mea.* |
| | Abl. *Meo, mea, meo.* | | Abl. *Meis.* |

*Answ.*

Q. *How are* noster *and* tuus, suus, vester, *declined?*

A. Like *meus*, saving that the three last do lack the Vocative case.

12. Q. *What Pronouns are of the fourth Declension?*

A. *Nostras, Vestras*, and this Noun *Cujas.*

Q. *How are they declined?*

A. Thus.

Singulariter.

Nom. *hic & hæc Nostras, & hoc Nostrate.*
Gen. *hujus Nostratis.*
Dat. *huic Nostrati.*
Acc. *hunc & hanc Nostratem & hoc Nostrate.*
Voc. *ô Nostras & ô Nostrate.*
Abl. *hoc hac & hoc Nostrate vel Nostrati.*

Pluraliter

Nom. *hi & hæ Nostrates & hæc Nostratia.*
Gen. *horum harum & horum Nostratium.*
Dat. *his Nostratibus.*
Acc. *hos & has Nostrates & hæc Nostratia.*
Voc. *ô Nostrates & ô Nostratia.*
Abl. *his Nostratibus.*

Q. *Why are* nostras, vestras, *and* cujas *called Gentiles?*

A. Because they properly betoken things pertaining to Countries and Nations, to Sects or Factions.

13. Q. *How many persons hath a Pronoun?*

*Answ.*

*Anſ.* Three.

Q. *How do you know the firſt Perſon?*

*A.* The firſt perſon ſpeaketh of himſelf, as *Ego* I, *Nos* We.

Q. *How know you the ſecond Perſon?*

*A.* The ſecond perſon is ſpoken to; as, *Tu*, Thou, *Vos* Ye.

Q. *What Caſe is of the ſecond perſon?*

*A.* Every Vocative caſe.

Q. *How know you the third perſon?*

*A.* The third perſon is ſpoken of; as, *Ille* He, *Illi* They.

Q. *What words are of the third perſon?*

*A.* All Nouns, Pronouns, and Participles, except *ego, nos, tu*, and *vos*.

---

## Of a Verb.

1 Q. *WHat is a Verb?*

*Anſw.* A Verb is a part of ſpeech declined with Mood and Tenſe, and betokene[illegible]ng; as, *amo* I love: or ſuffering; as, *Amo[illegible]d*: or being; as, *Sum* I am.

2 Q. *Which Verbs be called Perſonals?*

*Anſ.* Such as have perſons; as, *Ego amo*, I love; *Tu amas*, thou loveſt.

Q. *And which be called Impersonals?*

*A.* Such as have no perſons; as, *tædet* it irketh, *oportet* it behoveth.

3 Q. *How many kinds of Verbs Perſonals are there?*

*A.* Five.

Q. *Which be the five kinds of Verbs Perſonals?*

*Anſ.* Active, Paſſive, Neuter, Deponent, and Commune.

4. Q. *How know you a Verb active?*

*A.* A Verb Active endeth in *o*, and betokeneth to do as *Amo* I love, and by putting to *r* it may be a paſſive, as *Amor*.

5. Q. *How know you a Verb paſſive?*

*A.* A Verb paſſive endeth in *or*, and betokeneth to ſuffer, as *Amor*, I am loved; and by putting away *r*, it may be an Active, as *Amo*.

6. Q. *How know you a Verb Neuter?*

*A.* A Verb Neuter endeth in *o*, or *m*, and cannot take *r* to make it a Paſſive, as *curro* I run, *Sum* I am.

Q. *How is a Verb Neuter engliſhed?*

*A.* Sometimes actively, as *Curro* I run, and ſometimes paſſively, as *Ægroto* I am ſick.

7. Q. *How know you a Verb Deponent?*

*A.* A Verb Deponent endeth in *r* like a Paſſive, and yet in ſignification is but either active, as *Loquor verbum* I ſpeak a word; or Neuter, as *Glorior* I boaſt.

8. Q. *How know you a Verb Commune?*

*A.* A Verb Commune endeth in *r*, and yet in ſignification is both active and paſſive; as *Oſculor te* I kiſs thee, *Oſculor à te* I am kiſſed of thee.

## Moods.

9. Q. *How many Moods are there?*

*A.* Six.

Q. *Which be the ſix Moods?*

*A.* The Indicative, the Imperative, the Optative, the Potential, the Subjunctive, and the Infinitive.

10. Q. *How know you the Indicative Mood?*

*A.* The Indicative mood ſheweth a reaſon true or falſe, as *Ego amo* I love; or elſe asketh a queſtion, as *amas tu* doſt thou love?

11. Q. *How*

11. Q. *How know you the Imperative Mood?*

*A.* The Imperative mood biddeth or commandeth, as *Ama* love thou.

12. Q. *How know you the Optative Mood?*

*A.* The Optative wiſheth or deſireth, with theſe ſigns *Would God, I pray God, or God grant,* as *utinam amem,* I pray God I love; and it hath commonly an adverb of wiſhing joyned with him.

13. Q. *How know you the Potential Mood?*

*A.* The Potential mood is known by theſe ſigns, *May, can, might, would, ſhould, could,* or *ought*; as *Amem* I may or can love: without an Adverb joyned with him.

14. Q. *How know you the Subjunctive Mood?*

*A.* The Subjunctive mood hath evermore ſome Conjunction joyned with him, as *cum amarem,* when I loved.

Q. *Why is it called the Subjunctive mood?*

*A.* Becauſe it dependeth upon another Verb in the ſame ſentence, either going before, or coming after; as *Cum amarem eram miſer,* When I loved I was a wretch.

15. Q. *How know you the Infinitive Mood?*

*A.* The Infinitive mood ſignifieth to do, to ſuffer, or to be, and hath neither number nor perſon, nor Nominative caſe before it.

Q. *How is it commonly known in Engliſh?*

*A.* By this ſign *to,* as *amare* to love.

Q. *What if two Verbs come together without any Nominative caſe between them.*

*A.* Then the latter ſhall be the Infinitive mood, as *Cupio diſcere* I deſire to learn.

Gerunds

## Gerunds.

16. Q. *How many Gerunds belong to the Infinitive mood of Verbs?*

*A.* Three.

Q. *How do the three Gerunds end?*

*A.* In *di*, *do*, and *dum*.

Q. *What ſignification have Gerunds?*

*A.* Both the Active and Paſſive; as, *amandi* of loving, or of being loved, *amando* in loving, or in being loved, *amandum* to love, or to be loved.

---

## Supines.

17. Q. *How many Supines are pertaining unto Verbs?*

*A.* Two.

Q. *How doth the firſt Supine end?*

*Anſ.* In *um*.

Q. *Why is it called the firſt Supine?*

*A.* Becauſe it hath the ſignification of the Verb active; as, *Eo amatum*, I go to love.

Q. *How doth the latter Supine end?*

*A.* In *u*.

Q. *Why is it called the latter Supine?*

*A* Becauſe it hath for the moſt part the ſignification Paſſive; as, *difficilis amatu*, hard to be loved.

---

## Tenſes.

18. Q. *How many Tenſes or Times are there?*

*A.* Five.

Q. *which are the five?*

*A.* The Preſent Tenſe, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, the Preterpluperfect, and the Future.

Q. *How*

Q. *How know you the Preſent tenſe?*

*A.* The Preſent tenſe ſpeaketh of the time that now is; as, *Amo* I love.

Q. *How know you the Preterimperfect tenſe?*

*A.* The Preterimperfect tenſe ſpeaketh of the time not perfectly paſt; as, *amabam* I loved or did love.

Q. *How know you the Preterperfect tenſe?*

*A.* The Preterperfect tenſe ſpeaketh of the time perfectly paſt, with this ſign Have; as, *amavi* I have loved.

Q. *How know you the Preterpluperfect tenſe?*

*A.* The Preterpluperfect tenſe ſpeaketh of the time more than perfectly paſt, with this ſign Had; as, *amaveram* I had loved.

Q. *How know you the Future tenſe?*

*A.* The Future tenſe ſpeaketh of the time to come, with this ſign Shall or will; as, *amabo* I ſhall or will love.

## Perſons.

19. Q. *How many Perſons are there in Verbs?*

*A.* Three Perſons in both numbers; as Singulariter *Ego amo* I love, *tu amas* thou loveſt, *ille amat* he loveth: Pluraliter, *Nos amamus* we love, *vos amatis* ye love, *ille amant* they love.

## Conjugations.

20. Q. *How many Conjugations have Verbs?*

*A.* Verbs have four Conjugations.

Q. *How is the firſt Conjugation known?*

*A.* The firſt Conjugation hath *a* long before *re* and *ris*; as, *amare amaris*

Q. *How is the ſecond Conjugation known?*

*Anſ.*

*A.* The ſecond Conjugation hath *e* long before *re* and *ris*, as *Docere*, *doceris*.

Q. *How is the third Conjugation known?*

*A.* The third Conjugation hath *e* ſhort before *re* and *ris*, as *Legere*, *legeris*.

Q. *How is the fourth Conjugation known?*

*A.* The fourth conjugation hath *i* long before *re* and *ris*, as *Audire*, *audiris*.

---

## Verbs in o.

21. Q. *After what Examples are Verbs in* o *of the four Conjugations declined?*

*A.* After theſe examples, *amo* I love, *doceo* I teach, *lego* I read, and *audio* I hear.

Q. *Decline* Amo.

*A.* Amo, amas, amavi, amare, amandi, amando, amandum; amatum, amatu, amans, amaturus.

Q. *Decline* Doceo.

*A.* Doceo, doces, docui, docere, docendi, docendo, docendum; doctum, doctu, docens, docturus.

Q. *Decline* Lego.

*A.* Lego, legis, legi, legere, legendi, legendo, legendum; lectum, lectu, legens, lecturus.

Q. *Decline* audio.

*A.* Audio, audis, audivi, audire, audiendi, audiendo, audiendum; auditum, auditu, audiens, auditurus.

---

## Amo.

22. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Amo, *I love*, amas, *thou loveſt*, amat, *he loveth*: Plur. Amamus *we love*, amatis *ye love*, amant *they love*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Amo?

*An.*

*A.* Amabam *I loved or did love*, amabas *thou lovedſt or didſt love*, amabat *he loved or did love*: Plur. Amabamus *we loved or did love*, amabatis *ye loved or did love*, amabant *they loved or did love.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Preterperfect tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Amavi *I have love*d, amaviſti *thou haſt loved*, amavit *he hath loved*: Pl. Amavimus *we have loved*, amaviſtis *ye have loved*, amaverunt vel amavere *they have loved.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Preterpluperfect tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Amaveram *I had loved*, amaveras, *thou hadſt loved*, Amaverat *he had loved*: Plur. Amaveramus *we had loved*, amaveratis *ye had loved*: amaverant *they had loved.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Future tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Amabo *I ſhall or will love*, amabis *thou ſhalt or wilt love*, amabit *he ſhall or will love*: Plur. Amabimus *we ſhall or will love*, amabitis *ye ſhall or will love*, amabunt *they ſhall or will love.*

23. Q. *What is the Imperative mood Preſent tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Ama amato *love thou*, amet amato *love he or let him love*: Plur. Amemus *love we or let us love*, amate amatote *love ye*, ament amanto *love they or let them love.*

24. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Amem *I may or can love*, ames *thou mayeſt or canſt love*, amet *he may or can love*: Plur. Amemus *we may or can love*, ametis *ye may or can love*, ament *they may or can love.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Preterimperfect tenſe of* Amo?

*A.* Sing. Amarem *I might love*, amares *thou mighteſt love*,

*love*, amaret *he might love* : Plur. Amaremus *we might love*, amaretis *ye might love*, amarent *they might love*.

Q. *What is the Potential Mood Preterperfect tenſe of* Amo ?

*Anſ.* Sing. **Amaverim** *I might have loved*, Amaveris *thou mighteſt have loved*, Amaverit *he might have loved* : Plur. Amaverimus *we might have loved*, amaveritis *ye might have loved*, amaverint *they might have loved*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood Preterpluperfect tenſe of* Amo ?

*A.* Sing. Amaviſſem *I might have had loved*, amaviſſes *thou mighteſt have had loved*, amaviſſet *he might have had loved* : Plur. Amaviſſemus *we might have had loved*, amaviſſetis *ye might have had loved*, amaviſſent *they might have had loved*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood Future tenſe of* Amo ?

*A.* Sing. Amavero *I may love hereafter*, amaveris *thou mayeſt love hereafter*, amaverit *he may love hereafter* : Plur. Amaverimus *we may love hereafter*, amaveritis *ye may love hereafter*, amaverint *they may love hereafter*.

25. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood Preſent and Preterimperfect tenſe of* Amo ?

*Anſ.* Amare *to love*.

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect tenſe of* Amo ?

*A.* Amaviſſe *to have or had loved*.

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood Future tenſe of* Amo ?

*Anſ.* Amaturum eſſe *to love hereafter*.

Q. *What are the Gerunds of* Amo ?

*Anſ.* Amandi *of loving*, amando *in loving*, amandum *to love*.

Q. *What are the Supines of* Amo ?

*Anſw.* Amatum *to love*, Amatu *to be loved*.

Q. *What is the Participle of the preſent tenſe of* Amo ?

*Anſ.* Amans *loving*.

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Participle of the firſt Future tenſe of* Amo?
*A.* Amaturus *to love, or about to love.*

## Doceo.

26. Q. WHat *is the Indicative Mood Preſent tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A.* Sing. Doceo *I teach,* doces *thou teacheſt,* docet *he teacheth*: Plur. Docemus *we teach,* docetis *ye teach,* docent *they teach*

Q. *What is the Indicative Mood Preterimperfect tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A.* Sing. Docebam *I taught or did teach,* docebas *thou taughteſt or didſt teach,* docebat *he taught or did teach*: Plur. Docebamus *we taught or did teach,* docebatis *ye taught or did teach,* docebant *they taught or did teach.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Preterperfect tenſe of* Doceo.

*A.* Sing. Docui *I have taught,* docuiſti *thou haſt taught,* docuit *he hath taught*: Plur. Docuimus *we have taught,* docuiſtis *ye have taught,* docuerunt vel docuere *they have taught.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Preterpluperfect tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A.* Sing. Docueram *I had taught,* docueras *thou hadſt taught,* docuerat *he had taught*: Plur. Docueramus *we had taught,* docueratis *ye had taught,* docuerant *they had taught.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Future tenſe of* Doceo?

*A.* Sing. Docebo *I ſhall or will teach,* docebis *thou ſhalt or wilt teach,* docebit *he ſhall or will teach*: Plur. Docebimus *we ſhall or will teach,* docebitis *ye ſhall or will teach,* docebunt *they ſhall or will teach*

27. Q. *What is the Imperative mood Preſent tenſe of* Doceo ?

*Anſ.*

*A.* Sing. Doce docetò *teach thou*, doceat docetò *teach he or let him teach*: Plur. Doceamus *teach we or let us teach*, docete docetote *teach ye*, doceant docento *teach they or let them teach.*

28. Q. *What is the Potential mood Preſent tenſe of* Doceo?

*A.* Sing. Doceam *I may teach*, doceas *thou mayeſt teach*, doceat *he may teach*: Plur Doceamus *we may teach*, doceatis *ye may teach*, doceant *they may teach.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Preterimperfect tenſe of* Doceo?

*A.* Sing. Docerem *I might teach*, doceres *thou mighteſt teach*, doceret *he might teach*: Plur. Doceremus *we might teach*, docereris *ye might teach*, docerent *they might teach.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Preterperfect tenſe of* Doceo?

*A.* Sing. Docuerim *I might have taught*, docueris *thou mighteſt have taught*, docuerit *he might have taught*: Plur. Docuerimus *we might have taught*, docueritis *ye might have taught*, docuerint *they might have taught.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Preterpluperfect tenſe of* Doceo?

*A.* Sing. Docuiſſem *I might have had taught*, docuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had taught*, docuiſſet *he might have had taught*: Pl. Docuiſſemus *we might have had taught*, docuiſſetis *ye might have had taught*, docuiſſent *they might have had taught.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Future tenſe of* Doceo?

*A.* Sing. Docuero *I may teach hereafter*, docueris *thou mayeſt teach hereafter*, docuerit *he may teach hereafter*: Plur. Docuerimus *we may teach hereafter*, Docueritis *ye may teach hereafter*, docuerint *they may teach hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Doceo?

*An.*

*A.* Docere *to teach.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preter tenſe and preter-pluperfect tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A.* Docuiſſe *to have or had taught.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A.* Doctúrum eſſe *to teach hereafter.*

Q. *What are the Gerunds of* Doceo ?

*A.* Docendi *of teaching,* docendo *in teaching,* docendum *to teach.*

Q. *What are the Supines of* Doceo?

*A.* Doctum *to teach,* doctu *to be taught.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preſent tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A* Docens *teaching.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the firſt future tenſe of* Doceo ?

*A.* Doctúrus *to teach, or about to teach.*

---

## Lego.

30. Q. WHat *is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Lego *I read,* legis *thou readeſt,* legit *he readeth :* Plur. Legimus *we read,* legitis *ye read,* legunt *they read.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood pretevimperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A* Sing. Legebam *I read or did read,* legebas *thou readſt or didſt read,* legebat *he read or did read :* Plur. Legebamus *we read or did read,* legebatis *ye read or did read,* legebant *they read or did read.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Legi *I have read,* legiſti *thou haſt read,*

legit *he hath read*: Plur. Legimus *we have read*, legiſtis *ye have read*, legerunt vel legere *they have read.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Legeram *I had read*, legeras *thou hadſt read*, legerat *he had read*: Plur. Legeramus *we had read*, legeratis *ye had read*, legerant *they had read.*

Q *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Lego ?

*A* Sing Legam *I ſhall or will read*, leges *thou ſhalt or wilt read*, leget *he ſhall or will read*: Plur. Legemus *we ſhall or will read*, legetis *ye ſhall or will read*, legent *they ſhall or will read.*

31. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Lege legito *read thou*, legat legito *read he, or let him read*: Plur. Legamus *read we, or let us read*, legite legitote *read ye*, legant legunto *read they, or let them read.*

32. Q. *What is the potential mood preſent tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Legam *I may read*, legas *thou mayeſt read*, legat *he may read*: Plur. Legamus *we may read*, legatis *ye may read*, legant *they may read.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Legerem *I might read*, legeres *thou mighteſt read*, legeret *he might read*: Plur. Legeremus *we might read*, legeretis *ye might read*, legerent *they might read.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Sing. Legerim *I might have read*, legeris *thou mighteſt have read*, legerit *he might have read*: Plur. Legerimus *we might have read*, legeritis *ye might have read*, legerint *they might have read.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A. Sing.* Legiſſem *I might have had read,* legiſſes *thou mighteſt have had read,* legiſſet *he might have had read : Plur.* Legiſſemus *we might have had read,* legiſſetis *ye might have had read,* legiſſent *they might have had read.*

Q. *What is the potential mood future tenſe of* Lego ?

*A. Sin.* Legero *I may read hereafter,* legeris *thou mayeſt read hereafter,* legerit *he may read hereafter : Plur.* Legerimus *we may read hereafter,* legeritis *ye may read hereafter,* legerint *they may read hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent and preterimperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Legere *to read.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Legiſſe *to have or had read.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Lecturam eſſe *to read hereafter.*

Q. *What are the Gerunds of* Lego ?

*A.* Legendi *of reading,* legendo *in reading,* legendum *to read.*

Q. *What are the Supines of* Lego ?

*A.* Lectum *to read,* lectu *to be read.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preſent tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Legens *reading.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the firſt Future tenſe of* Lego ?

*A.* Lecturus *to read, or about to read.*

## Audio.

31. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Audio ?

*A.* Sing. Audio *I hear*, audis *thou heareſt*, audit *he heareth* : Plur. Audimus *we hear*, auditis *ye hear*, audiunt *they hear*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Audio ?

*A.* Sing. Audiebam *I heard or did hear*, audiebas *thou heardſt, or didſt hear*, audiebat *he heard, or did hear* : Plur. Audiebamus *we heard, or did hear*, audiebatis *ye heard, or did hear*, audiebant *they heard, or did hear*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Preterperfect tenſe of* Audio ?

*A.* Sing. Audivi *I have heard*, audiviſti *thou haſt heard*, audivit *he hath heard* : Plur. Audivimus *we have heard*, audiviſtis *ye have heard*, audiverunt vel audivere *they have heard*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Preterpluperfect tenſe of* Audio ?

*A.* Sing. Audiveram *I had heard*, audiveras *thou hadſt heard*, audiverat *he had heard* : Plur. Audiveramus *we had heard*, audiveratis *ye had heard*, audiverant *they had heard*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Future tenſe of* Audio ?

*A.* Sing. Audiam *I ſhall or will hear*, audies *thou ſhalt or wilt hear*, audiet *he ſhall or will hear* : Plur. Audiemus *we ſhall or will hear*, audietis *ye ſhall or will hear*, audient *they ſhall or will hear*.

35. Q. *What is the Imperative mood Preſent tenſe of* Audio ?

*A.* Sing.

*A.* Sing. Audi audito *hear thou*, audiat audito *let him hear*: Plur. Audiamus *hear we, or let us hear*, Audite auditore *hear ye*, audiant audiunto *hear they, or let them hear.*

36. Q. *What is the Potential Mood preſent tenſe of* Audio?

*A.* Sing. Audiam *I may hear*, audias *thou mayeſt hear*, audiat *he may hear*: Plur. Audiamus *we may hear*, audiatis *ye may hear*, audiant *they may hear.*

Q. *What is the Potential Mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Audio?

*A.* Sing. Audirem *I might hear*, audires *thou mighteſt hear*, auditet *he might hear*: Plur. Audiremus *we might hear*, audiretis *ye might hear*, audirent *they might hear.*

Q. *What is the Potential Mood preterperfect tenſe of* Audio?

*A.* Sing. Audiverim *I might have heard*, audiveris *thou mighteſt have heard*, audiverit *he might have heard*: Plur. Audiverimus *we might have heard*, audiveritis *ye might have heard*, audiverint *they might have heard.*

Q. *What is the Potential Mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Audio?

*A.* Sing. Audiviſſem *I might have had heard*, audiviſſes *thou mighteſt have had heard*, audiviſſet *he might have had heard*: Plur. Audiviſſemus *we might have had heard*, audiviſſetis *ye might have had heard*, audiviſſent *they might have had heard.*

Q. *What is the Potential Mood Future tenſe of* Audio?

*A.* Sing. Audivero *I may hear hereafter*, audiveris *thou mayeſt hear hereafter*, audiverit *he may hear hereafter*: Plur. Audiverimus *we may hear hereafter*, audiveritis *ye may hear hereafter*, audiverint *they may hear hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Audio ?

A. Audire *to hear.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preter tenſe and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Audio ?

A. Audiviſſe *to have or had heard.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Audio ?

A. Auditurum eſſe *to hear hereafter.*

Q. *What are the Gerunds of* Audio ?

A. Audiendi *of hearing,* audiendo *in hearing,* audiendum *to hear.*

Q. *What are the Supines of* Audio ?

A. Auditum *to hear,* auditu *to be heard.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preſent tenſe of* Audio ?

A. Audiens *hearing.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the firſt Future tenſe of* Audio ?

A. Auditurus *to hear, or about to hear.*

---

## The Verb *Sum.*

38. Q. WHy *muſt we learn to decline the Verb* Sum *I am, before we decline any in* Or ?

A. For ſupplying of many tenſes lacking in all ſuch Verbs.

Q. *How is the Verb* Sum *declined ?*

A. In this wiſe following, *viz.* Sum, es, fui, eſſe, futurus, *to be.*

39. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Sum ?

A. Sing. Sum *I am,* es *thou art,* eſt *he is.* Plur. Sumus

ſumus *we are*, eſtis *ye are*, ſunt *they are*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Eram *I was*, eras *thou waſt*, erat *he was*: Plur. Eramus *we were*, eratis *ye were*, erant *they were*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Fui *I have been*, fuiſti *thou haſt been*, fuit *he hath been*: Plur. Fuimus *we have been*, fuiſtis *ye have been*, fuerunt vel fuere *they have been*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Fueram I *had been*, fueras *thou hadſt been*, fuerat *he had been*: Plur. Fueramus *we had been*, fueratis *ye had been*, fuerant *they had been*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Ero I *ſhall or will be*, eris *thou ſhalt or wilt be*, erit *he ſhall or will be*: Plur. Erimus *we ſhall or will be*, eritis *ye ſhall or will be*, erunt *they ſhall or will be*.

Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Sis es eſto *be thou*, ſit eſto *be he, or let him be*, Plur. Simus *be we, or let us be*, ſitis eſte eſtote *be ye*, ſint ſunto *be they, or let them be*.

41. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Sim *I may be*, ſis *thou mayeſt be*, ſit *he may be*: Plur. Simus *we may be*, ſitis *ye may be*, ſint *they may be*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Eſſem *I might be*, eſſes *thou mighteſt be*, eſſet *he might be*: Plur. Eſſemus *we might be*, eſſetis *ye might be*, eſſent *they might be*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Sum ?

*A.* Sing. Fuerim *I might have been,* fueris *thou mighteſt have been,* fuerit *he might have been:* Plur. Fuerimus *we might have been,* fueritis *ye might have been,* fuerint *they might have been.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood future tenſe?*

*A.* Sing. Fuero *I may be hereafter,* fueris *thou mayeſt be hereafter,* fuerit *he may be hereafter*: Plur. Fuerimus *we may be hereafter,* fueritis *ye may be hereafter,* fuerint *they may be hereafter.*

42. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preter imperfect tenſe of* Sum?

*A.* Eſſe *to be.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Sum?

*A.* Fuiſſe *to have or had been.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Sum?

*A.* Fore vel futurum eſſe *to be hereafter.*

---

## Verbs in *Or.*

43 Q. *After what examples are Verbs in* or *of the four Conjugations declined?*

*A.* After theſe examples, *viz.* Amor *I am loved;* Doceor *I am taught;* Legor *I am read;* Audior *I am heard.*

Q. *Decline* Amor.

*A.* Amor, amaris vel amare, amatus ſum vel fui, amari, amatus, amandus *to be loved.*

Q. *Decline* Doceor.

*A.* Doceor, doceris vel docere, doctus ſum vel fui, doceri, doctus, docendus *to be taught.*

Q. *Decline* Legor.

*A.* Legor, legeris vel legere, lectus ſum vel fui, legi, lectus, legendus *to be read.*

Q. *Decline* Audior. *A.* Audi-

*A.* Audior, audiris vel audire, auditus ſum vel fui, audiri, auditus, audiendus *to be heard.*

---

## Amor.

41. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Sing. Amor *I am loved,* amaris vel amare *thou art loved,* amatur *he is loved* : Plur. Amamur *we are loved,* amamini *ye are loved,* amantur *they are loved.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Sing. Amabar *I was loved,* amabaris vel amabare *thou waſt loved,* amabatur *he was loved* : Plur. Amabamur *we were loved,* amabamini *ye were loved,* amabantur *they were loved.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Sing. Amatus ſum vel fui *I have been loved,* amatus es vel fuiſti *thou haſt been loved,* amatus eſt vel fuit *he hath been loved* : Plur. Amati ſumus vel fuimus *we have been loved,* amati eſtis vel fuiſtis *ye have been loved,* amati ſunt fuerunt vel fuere *they have been loved.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Sing. Amatus eram vel fueram *I had been loved,* amatus eras vel fueras *thou hadſt been loved,* amatus erat vel fuerat *he had been loved* : Plur. Amati eramus vel fueramus *we had been loved,* amati eratis vel fueratis *ye had been loved,* amati erant vel fuerant *they had been loved.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Sing. Amabor *I ſhall or will be loved,* amaberis vel amabere *thou ſhalt or wilt be loved,* amabitur *he ſhall or will be loved* : Plur. Amabimur *we ſhall or will*

*will be loved,* amabamini *ye ſhall or will be loved,* amabuntur *they ſhall or will be loved.*

45. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Amor ?

*A. Sing.* Amare amator *be thou loved,* ametur amator *let him be loved :* Plur. Amemur *let us be loved,* amamini amaminor *be ye loved,* amentur amantor *let them be loved.*

46. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Amor ?

*A. Sing.* Amer *I may be loved,* ameris vel amere *thou mayeſt be loved,* ametur *he may be loved :* Plur. Amemur *we may be loved,* amemini *ye may be loved,* amentur *they may be loved.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A. Sing.* Amarer *I might be loved,* amareris vel amarere *thou mighteſt be loved,* amaretur *he might be loved :* Plur. Amaremur *we might be loved,* amaremini *ye might be loved,* amarentur *they might be loved.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe ?*

*A.* Sing. Amatus ſim vel fuerim *I might have been loved,* amatus ſis vel fueris *thou mighteſt have been loved,* amatus ſit vel fuerit *he might have been loved* : Plur. Amati ſimus vel fuerimus *we might have been loved,* amati ſitis vel fueritis *ye might have been loved,* amati ſint vel fuerint *they might have been loved.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A. Sing.* Amatus eſſem vel fuiſſem *I might have had been loved,* amatus eſſes vel fuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been loved,* amatus eſſet vel fuiſſet *he might have had been loved :* Plur. Amati eſſemus vel fuiſſemus *we might have had been loved,* amati eſſetis vel fuiſſetis *ye might have had been loved,* amati eſſent vel fuiſſent *they might have had been loved.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Potential mood future tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Sing. Amatus ero vel fuero *I may be loved hereafter*, amatus eris vel fueris *thou mayeſt be loved hereafter*, amatus erit vel fuerit *he may be loved hereafter* : Plur. Amati erimus vel fuerimus *we may be loved hereafter*, amati eritis vel fueritis *ye may be loved hereafter*, amati erunt vel fuerint *they may be loved hereafter*.

47. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Amari *to be loved.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect tenſe and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Amatum eſſe vel fuiſſe *to have or had been loved.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood Future tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Amarum iri vel amandum eſſe *to be loved hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preterperfect tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Amatus *loved.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the Future tenſe of* Amor ?

*A.* Amandus *to be loved.*

---

## Doceor.

48. Q. WHat *is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Sing. Doceor *I am taught*, doceris vel docere *thou art taught*, docetur *he is taught* : Plur. Docemur *we are taught*, docemini *ye are taught*, docentur *they are taught.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Sing. Docebar *I was taught*, docebaris vel docebare *thou waſt taught*, docebatur *he was taught* : Plur. Doce-

docebamur *we were taught*, docebamini *ye were taught*, docebantur *they were taught.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Sing. Doctus ſum vel fui *I have been taught*, doctus es vel fuiſti *thou haſt been taught*, doctus eſt vel fuit *he hath been taught :* Plur. Docti ſumus vel fuimus *we have been taught*, docti eſtis vel fuiſtis *ye have been taught*, docti ſunt fuerunt vel fuere *they have been taught.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Sing. Doctus eram vel fueram *I had been taught*, doctus eras vel fueras *thou hadſt been taught*, doctus erat vel fuerat *he had been taught :* Plur. Docti eramus vel fueramus *we had been taught*, docti eratis vel fueratis *ye had been taught*, docti erant vel fuerant *they had been taught.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Doctor ?

*A.* Sing. Docebor *I ſhall or will be taught*, doceberis vel docebere *thou ſhalt or wilt be taught*, docebitur *he ſhall or will be taught :* Plur. Docebimur *we ſhall or will be taught*, Docebimini *ye ſhall or will be taught*, docebuntur *they ſhall or will be taught.*

49. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Sing. Docere docetor *be thou taught*, doceatur doctor *let him be taught :* Plur. Doceamur *let us be taught*, docemini doceminor *be ye taught*, doceantur docentor *let them be taught.*

50. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Sing. Docear *I may be taught*, docearis vel doceare *thou mayeſt be taught*, docearur *he may be taught :* Plur. Doceamur *we may be taught*, doceamini *ye may be taught*, doceantur *they may be taught.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Preterimperfect tenſe of* Doceor?

*A.* Sing Docerer *I might be taught*, docereris vel docerere *thou mighteſt be taught*, doceretur *he might be taught*: Plur. Doceremur *we might be taught*, doceremini *ye might be taught*, docerentur *they might be taught.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Doceor?

*A.* Sing. Doctus ſim vel fuerim *I might have been taught*, doctus ſis vel fueris *thou mighteſt have been taught*, doctus ſit vel fuerit *he might have been taught*: Plur. Docti ſimus vel fuerimus *we might have been taught*, docti ſitis vel fueritis *ye might have been taught*, docti ſint vel fuerint *they might have been taught.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Doceor?

*A.* Sing. Doctus eſſem vel fuiſſem *I might have had been taught*, doctus eſſes vel fuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been taught*, doctus eſſet vel fuiſſet *he might have had been taught*: Plur Docti eſſemus vel fuiſſemus *we might have had been taught*, docti eſſetis vel fuiſſetis *ye might have had been taught*, docti eſſent vel fuiſſent *they might have had been taught.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Future tenſe of* Doceor?

*A.* Sing. Doctus ero vel fuero *I may be taught hereafter*, doctus eris vel fueris *thou mayeſt be taught hereafter*, doctus erit vel fuerit *he may be taught hereafter*: Plur. Docti erimus vel fuerimus *we may be taught hereafter*, docti eritis vel fueritis *ye may be taught hereafter*, docti erunt vel fuerint *they may be taught hereafter.*

51. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Doceor?

*A.* Do-

*A.* Doceri *to be taught.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Doctum eſſe vel fuiſſe *to have or had been taught.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Doctum iri vel docendum eſſe *to be taught hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preterperfect tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Doctus *taught.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the Future tenſe of* Doceor ?

*A.* Docendus *to be taught.*

---

## Legor.

52. Q. WHat *is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Legor *I am read,* legeris vel legere *thou art read,* legitur *he is read :* Plur. Legimur *we are read,* legimini *ye are read,* leguntur *they are read.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Legebar *I was read,* legebaris vel legebare *thou waſt read,* legebatur *he was read :* Plur. Legebamur *we were read,* legebamini *ye were read,* legebantur *they were read.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Lectus ſum vel fui *I have been read,* lectus es vel fuiſti *thou haſt been read,* lectus eſt vel fuit *he hath been read :* Plur. Lecti ſumus vel fuimus *we have been read,* lecti eſtis vel fuiſtis *ye have been read,* lecti ſunt fuerunt vel fuere *they have been read.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Lectus eram vel fueram *I had been read,* lectus eras vel fueras *thou hadſt been read,* lectus erat vel fuerat *he had been read:* Plur. Lecti eramus vel fueramus *we had been read,* lecti eratis vel fueratis *ye had been read,* lecti erant vel fuerant *they had been read.*

Q. *What is the indicative mood future tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Legar *I ſhall or will be read,* legeris vel legere *thou ſhalt or wilt be read,* legetur *he ſhall or will be read:* Plur. Legemur *we ſhall or will be read,* legemini *ye ſhall or will be read,* legentur *they ſhall or will be read.*

53. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Legere legitor *be thou read,* legatur legitor *let him be read:* Plur. Legamur *let us be read,* legimini legiminor *be ye read,* legantur leguntor *let them be read.*

54. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Legar *I may be read,* legaris vel legare *thou mayeſt be read,* legatur *he may be read:* Plur. Legamur *we may be read:* legamini *ye may be read,* legantur *they may be read.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Legerer *I might be read,* legereris vel legerere *thou mighteſt be read,* legeretur *he might be read:* Plur. Legeremur *we might be read,* legeremini *ye might be read,* legerentur *they might be read.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Legor ?

*A.* Sing. Lectus ſim vel fuerim *I might have been read,*

*read*, lectus ſis vel fueris *thou mighteſt have been read*, lectus ſit vel fuerit *he might have been read*: Plur. Lecti ſimus vel fuerimus *we might have been read*, lecti ſitis vel fueritis *ye might have been read*, lecti ſint vel fuerint *they might have been read.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Sing. Lectus eſſem vel fuiſſem *I might have had been read*, lectus eſſes vel fuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been read*, lectus eſſet vel fuiſſet *he might have had been read*: Plur. Lecti eſſemus vel fuiſſemus *we might have had been read*, lecti eſſetis vel fuiſſetis *ye might have had been read*, lecti eſſent vel fuiſſent *they might have had been read.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood future tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Sing. Lectus ero vel fuero *I may be read hereafter*, lectus eris vel fueris *thou mayeſt be read hereafter*, lectus erit vel fuerit *he may be read hereafter*: Plur. Lecti erimus vel fuerimus *we may be read hereafter*, lecti eritis vel fueritis *ye may be read hereafter*, lecti erunt vel fuerint *they may be read hereafter.*

55. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Legi *to be read.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Lectum eſſe vel fuiſſe *to have or had been read.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Lectum iri vel legendum eſſe *to be read hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preterperfect tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Lectus *read.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the future tenſe of* Legor?

*A.* Legendus *to be read.*

56. Q.

56. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Audior *I am heard,* audiris vel audire *thou art heard,* auditur *he is heard:* Plur. Audimur *we are heard,* audimini *ye are heard,* audiuntur *they are heard.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A* Sing. Audiebar *I was heard,* audiebaris vel audiebare *thou waſt heard,* audiebatur *he was heard:* Pl. Audiebamur *we were heard,* audiebamini *ye were heard,* audiebantur *they were heard.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Auditus ſum vel fui *I have been heard,* auditus es vel fuiſti *thou haſt been heard,* auditus eſt vel fuit *he hath been heard:* Plur. Auditi ſumus vel fuimus *we have been heard,* auditi eſtis vel fuiſtis *ye have been heard,* auditi ſunt fuerunt vel fuere *they have been heard.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Auditus eram vel fueram *I had been heard,* auditus eras vel fueras *thou hadſt been heard,* auditus erat vel fuerat *he had been heard:* Plur. Auditi eramus vel fueramus *we had been heard,* auditi eratis vel fueratis *ye had been heard,* auditi erant vel fuerant *they had been heard.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Audiar *I ſhall or will be heard,* audieris vel audiere *thou ſhalt or wilt be heard,* audietur *he ſhall or will be heard:* Plur. Audiemur *we ſhall or will be heard,* audiemini *ye ſhall or will be heard,* audientur *they ſhall or will be heard.*

57. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Audire auditor *be thou heard*, audiator auditor *let him be heard*: Plur. Audiamur *be we heard*, audimini audiminor *be ye heard*, audiantur audiuntor *let them be heard.*

58. Q. *What is the potential mood preſent tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Audiar *I may be heard*, audiaris vel audiare *thou mayeſt be heard*, audiatur *he may be heard*: Pl. Audiamur *we may be heard*, audiamini *ye may be heard*, audiantur *they may be heard.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Audirer *I might be heard*, audireris vel audirere *thou mighteſt be heard*, audiretur *he might be heard*: Plur. Audiremur *we might be heard*, audiremini *ye might be heard*, audirentur *they might be heard.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A* Sing. Auditus ſim vel fuerim *I might have been heard*, auditus ſis vel fueris *thou mighteſt have been heard*, auditus ſit vel fuerit *he might have been heard*: Plur. Auditi ſimus vel fuerimus *we might have been heard*: auditi ſitis vel fueritis *ye might have been heard*, auditi ſint vel fuerint *they might have been heard.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing. Auditus eſſem vel fuiſſem *I might have had been heard*, auditus eſſes vel fuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been heard*: auditus eſſet vel fuiſſet *he might have had been heard*: Plur. Auditi eſſemus vel fuiſſemus *we might have had been heard*, auditi eſſetis vel fuiſſetis *ye might have had been heard*, auditi eſſent vel fuiſſent *they might have had been heard.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood future tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Sing.

*A.* Sing. Auditus ero vel fuero *I may be heard hereafter*, auditus eris vel fueris *thou mayeſt be heard hereafter*, auditus erit vel fuerit *he may be heard hereafter*: Plur. Auditi erimus vel fuerimus *we may be heard hereafter*, auditi eritis vel fueritis *ye may be heard hereafter*, auditi erunt vel fuerint *they may be heard hereafter.*

59. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Auditi *to be heard.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preter tenſe and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Auditum eſſe vel fuiſſe *to have or had been heard.*

Q. *What is the Future tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Auditum iri vel audiendum eſſe *to be heard hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the preterperfect tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Auditus *heard.*

Q. *What is the Participle of the Future tenſe of* Audior?

*A.* Audiendus *to be heard.*

---

## Certain Verbs Irregular.

60. Q. *Which be the Verbs going out of Rule, or which are declined and formed in another manner?*

*A.* Poſſum, volo, nolo, malo, edo, fero, fio, fe-ror.

Q. *Decline* Poſſum *to may or can, or to be able.*

*A.* Poſſum, potes, potui, poſſe, potens.

Q. *Decline* Volo *to will, or to be willing.*

*A.* Volo, vis, volui, velle, volendi, volendo, volendum; ſupinis caret *(it wants the ſupins)* volens.

Q. *Decline* nolo *to nill, or to be unwilling.*

*A.* Nolo, nonvis, nolui, nolle, nolendi, nolendo, nolendum; ſupinis caret, nolens.

Q. *Decline* malo *to have rather, or to be more willing.*

*A.* Malo, mavis, malui, malle, malendi, malendo, malendum; ſupinis caret, malens.

Q. *Decline* edo *to eat.*

*A.* Edo, edis vel es, edi, edere vel eſſe, edendi, edendo, edendum, eſum, eſu vel eſtum, eſtu, edens eſurus, vel eſturus.

Q. *Decline* fero *to ſuffer.*

*A.* Fero, fers, tuli, ferre, ferendi, ferendo, ferendum, latum, latu, ferens, laturus.

Q. *Decline* fio *to be made or done.*

*A.* Fio, fis, factus ſum vel fui, fieri, factus, faciendus.

Q. *Decline* feror *to be born or ſuffered.*

*A.* Feror, ferris vel ferre, latus ſum vel fui, ferri, latus, ferendus.

---

## Poſſum.

61. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Poſſum *I am able*, potes *thou art able*, poteſt *he is able*: Plur. Poſſumus *we are able*, poteſtis *ye are able*, poſſunt *they are able.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Poteram *I was able*, poteras *thou waſt able*, poterat *he was able*: Plur. Poteramus *we were able*, poteratis *ye were able*, poterant *they were able.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preter tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Potui *I have been able*, potuiſti *thou haſt been*

*been able,* potuit *he hath been able:* Plur. Potuimus *we have been able,* potuiſtis *ye have been able,* potuerunt vel potuere *they have been able.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Potueram *I had been able,* potueras *thou hadſt been able,* potuerat *he had been able:* Plur. Potueramus *we had been able,* potueratis *ye had been able,* potuerant *they had been able.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Potero *I ſhall or will be able,* poteris *thou ſhalt or wilt be able,* poterit *he ſhall or will be able:* Plur. Poterimus *we ſhall or will be able,* poteritis *ye ſhall or will be able,* poterint *they ſhall or will be able.*

62. Q. *Which of the Verbs irregular have no Imperative Mood?*

*A.* Poſſum, Volo, *and* Malo.

63. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Poſſim *I may be able,* poſſis *thou mayeſt be able,* poſſit *he may be able:* Plur. Poſſimus *we may be able,* poſſitis *ye may be able,* poſſint *they may be able.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Poſſem *I might be able,* poſſes *thou mighteſt be able,* poſſet *he might be able:* Plur. Poſſemus *we might be able,* poſſetis *ye might be able,* poſſent *they might be able.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Potuerim *I might have been able,* potueris *thou mighteſt have been able,* potuerit *he might have been able:* Plur. Potuerimus *we might have been able,* potueritis *ye might have been able,* potuerint *they might have been able.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Poſſum?

*A.* Sing. Potuiſſem *I might have had been able*, potuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been able*, potuiſſet *he might have had been able* : Plur. Potuiſſemus *we might have had been able*, potuiſſetis *ye might have had been able*, potuiſſent *they might have had been able.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Future tenſe of* Poſſum ?

*A.* Sing. Potuero *I may be able hereafter*, potueris *thou mayeſt be able hereafter*, potuerit *he may be able hereafter* : Plur. Potuerimus *we may be able hereafter*, potueritis *ye may be able hereafter*, potuerint *they may be able hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preter-imperfect tenſe of* Poſſum ?

*A.* Poſſe *to be able.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preter tenſe and preter-pluperfect tenſe of* Poſſum ?

*A.* Potuiſſe *to have or had been able.*

---

## Volo.

65. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Sing. Volo *I am willing*, vis *thou art willing*, vult *he is willing* : Plur. Volumus *we are willing*, vultis *ye are willing*, volunt *they are willing.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Sing. Volebam *I was willing*, volebas *thou waſt willing*, volebat *he was willing* : Plur. Volebamus *we were willing*, volebatis *ye were willing*, volebant *they were willing.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Sing.

*A.* Sing. Volui *I have been willieg*, voluiſti *thou haſt been willing*, voluit *he hath been willing*: Plur. Voluimus *we have been willing*, voluiſtis *ye have been willing*, voluerunt vel voluere *they have been willing.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Volo?

*A.* Sing. Volueram *I had been willing*, volueras *thou hadſt been willing*, voluerat *he had been willing*: Plur. Volueramus *we had been willing*, volueratis *ye had been willing*, voluerant *they had been willing.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Future tenſe of* Volo?

*A.* Sing. Volam *I ſhall or will be willing*, voles *thou ſhalt or wilt be willing*, volet *he ſhall or will be willing*: Plur. Volemus *we ſhall or will be willing*, voletis *ye ſhall or will be willing*, volent *they ſhall or will be willing.*

66. Q. *What is the potential mood preſent tenſe of* Volo?

*A.* Sing. Velim *I may be willing*, velis *thou mayeſt be willing*, velit *he may be willing*: Plur. Velimus *we may be willing*, velitis *ye may be willing*, velint *they may be willing.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Volo?

*A.* Sing Vellem *I might be willing*, velles *thou mighteſt be willing*, vellet *he might be willing*: Plur. Vellemus *we might be willing*, velletis *ye might be willing*, vellent *they might be willing.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Volo?

*A* Sing. Voluerim *I might have been willing*, voluerris *thou mighteſt have been willing*, voluerit *he might have been willing*: Plur. Voluerimus *we might have been willing*, voluerritis *ye might have been willing*, voluerint *they might have been willing.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Sing. Voluiſſem *I might have had been willing*, voluiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been willing*, voluiſſet *he might have had been willing* : Plur. Voluiſſemus *we might have had been willing*, voluiſſetis *ye might have had been willing*, voluiſſent *they might have had been willing*.

Q. *What is the potential mood future tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Sing. Voluero *I may be willing hereafter*, volueris *thou mayeſt be willing hereafter*, voluerit *he may be willing hereafter* : Plur. Voluerimus *we may be willing hereafter*, volueritis *ye may be willing hereafter*, voluerint *they may be willing hereafter*.

67. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Velle *to be willing*.

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect tenſe and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Volo ?

*A.* Voluiſſe *to have or had been willing*.

---

## Nolo.

68. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Nolo ?

*A.* Sing. Nolo *I am unwilling*, nonvis *thou art unwilling*, nonvult *he is unwilling* : Plur. Nolumus *we are unwilling*, nonvultis *ye are unwilling*, nolunt *they are unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Nolo ?

*A.* Sing.

*A.* Sing. Nolebam *I was unwilling*, nolebas *thou waſt unwilling*, nolebat *he was unwilling*: Plur. Nolebamus *we were unwilling*, nolebatis *ye were unwilling*, nolebant *they were unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Nolui *I have been unwilling*, noluiſti *thou haſt been unwilling*, noluit *he hath been unwilling*: Plur. Noluimus *we have been unwilling*, noluiſtis *ye have been unwilling*, noluerunt vel noluere *they have been unwilling*,

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Noluerem *I had been unwilling*, nolueras *thou hadſt been unwilling*, noluerat *he had been unwilling*: Plur. Nolueramus *we had been unwilling*, nolueratis *ye had been unwilling*, noluerant *they had been unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Future tenſe of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Nolam *I ſhall or will be unwilling*, noles *thou ſhalt or wilt be unwilling*, nolet *he ſhall or will be unwilling*: Plur. Nolemus *we ſhall or will be unwilling*, noletis *ye ſhall or will be unwilling*, nolent *they ſhall or will be unwilling*.

69. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Noli nolite *be thou unwilling*: Plur. Nolite nolitote *be ye unwilling*.

70. Q. *What is the Potential Mood preſent tenſe of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Nolim *I may be unwilling*, nolis *thou mayeſt be unwilling*, nolit *he may be unwilling*: Pl. Nolimus *we may be unwilling*, nolitis *ye may be unwilling*, nolint *they may be unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Potential Mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing.

*A.* Sing. Nollem *I might be unwilling*, nolles *thou mightest be unwilling*, nollet *he might be unwilling*: Plur. Nollemus *we might be unwilling*, nolletis *ye might be unwilling*, nollent *they might be unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tense of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Noluerim *I might have been unwilling*, nolueris *thou mightest have been unwilling*, noluerit *he might have been unwilling*: Plur. Noluerimus *we might have been unwilling*, nolueritis *ye might have been unwilling*, noluerint *they might have been unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tense of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Noluissem *I might have had been unwilling*, noluisses *thou mightest have had been unwilling*, noluisset *he might have had been unwilling*: Plur. Noluissemus *we might have had been unwilling*, noluissetis *ye might have had been unwilling*, noluissent *they might have had been unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood Future tense of* Nolo?

*A.* Sing. Noluero *I may be unwilling hereafter*, nolueris *thou mayest be unwilling hereafter*, noluerit *he may be unwilling hereafter*: Plur. Noluerimus *we may be unwilling hereafter*, nolueritis *ye may be unwilling hereafter*, noluerint *they may be unwilling hereafter*.

71. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood present tense and preterimperfect tense of* Nolo?

*A.* Nolle *to be unwilling*.

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect tense and preterpluperfect tense of* Nolo?

*A.* Noluisse *to have or had been unwilling*.

## Malo.

72 Qu. *WHat is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Sing. Malo *I am more willing*, mavis *thou art more willing*, mavult *he is more willing*: Plur. Malumus *we are more willing*, mavultis *ye are more willing*, malunt *they are more willing*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Sing. Malebam *I was more willing*, malebas *thou waſt more willing*, malebat *he was more willing*: Plur. Malebamus *we were more willing*, malebatis *ye were more willing*, malebant *they were more willing*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Sing. Malui *I have been more willing*, maluiſti *thou haſt been more willing*, maluit *he hath been more willing*: Plur. Maluimus *we have been more willing*, maluiſtis *ye have been more willing*, maluerunt vel maluere *they have been more willing*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Sing. Malueram *I had been more willing*, maluer-as *thou hadſt been more willing*, maluerat *he had been more willing*: Plur. Malueramus *we had been more willing*, malueratis *ye had been more willing*, malurant *they had been more willing*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood Future tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Sing. Malam *I ſhall or will be more willing*, males *thou ſhalt or wilt be more willing*, malet *he ſhall or will be more willing*, Plur. Malemus *we ſhall or will be*

*be more willing*, maletis *ye ſhall or will be more willing*, malent *they ſhall or will be more willing*.

73. Q. *What is the Potential Mood preſent tenſe of* Malo ?

*A.* Sing. Malim *I may be more willing*, malis *thou mayeſt be more willing*, malit *he may be more willing*: Plur. Malimus *we may be more willing*, malitis *ye may be more willing*, malint *they may be more willing*.

Q. *What is the Potential Mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Malo ?

*A.* Sing. Mallem *I might be more willing*, malles *thou mighteſt be more willing*, mallet *he might be more willing*: Pl. Mallemus *we might be more willing*, malletis *ye might be more willing*, mallent *they might be more willing*.

Q. *What is the Potential Mood preterperfect tenſe of* Malo ?

*A.* Sing. Maluerim *I might have been more willing*, malueris *thou mighteſt have been more willing*, maluerit *he might have been more willing*: Plur. Maluerimus *we might have been more willing*, malueritis *ye might have been more willing*, maluerint *they might have been more willing*.

74. Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Malo ?

*A.* Sing. Maluiſſem *I might have had been more willing*, maluiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been more willing*, maluiſſet *he might have had been more willing*: Plural. Maluiſſemus *we might have had been more willing*, maluiſſetis *ye might have had been more willing*, maluiſſent *they might have had been more willing*.

Q. *What is the Potential mood future tenſe of* Malo ?

*A.* Sing. Maluero *I may be more willing hereafter*, malueris *thou mayeſt be more willing hereafter*, maluerit *he may be more willing hereafter*:

Plur.

Plur. Maluerimus *we may be more willing hereafter*, malueritis *ye may be more willing hereafter*, maluerint *they may be more willing hereafter*.

75. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Malle *to be more willing*.

Q. *What is the Preterperfect tenſe and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Malo?

*A.* Maluiſſe *to have or had been more willing*.

---

## Edo.

76. Q. WHat *is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Edo?

*A.* Sing. Edo *I eat*, edes vel es *thou eateſt*, edit vel eſt *he eateth*: Plur. Edimus *we eat*, editis vel eſtis *ye eat*, edunt *they eat*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Edo?

*A.* Sing. Edebam *I did eat*, edebas *thou didſt eat*, edebat *he did eat*: Plur. Edebamus *we did eat*, edebatis *ye did eat*, edebant *they did eat*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Edo?

*A.* Sing. Edi *I have eaten*, ediſti *thou haſt eaten*, edit *he hath eaten*: Plur. Edimus *we have eaten*, ediſtis *ye have eaten*, ederunt vel edere *they have eaten*.

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Edo?

*A.* Sing. Ederam *I had eaten*, ederas *thou hadſt eaten*,ederat *he had eaten*: Plur. Ederamus *we had eaten*, ederatis *ye had eaten*, ederant *they had eaten*.

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Edo *?*

*A.* Sing. Edam *I ſhall or will eat,* edes *thou ſhalt or wilt eat,* edet *he ſhall or will eat*: Plur. Edemus *we ſhall or will eat*, edetis *ye ſhall or will eat,* edent *they ſhall or will eat.*

77. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Sing. Es, eſto, ede, edito, *eat thou,* edat, eſto, edito *eat he, or let him eat*: Plur. Edamus *eat we, or let us eat,* edite, eſte, eſtote, editote *eat ye,* edant edunto *eat they, or let them eat.*

78. Q. *What is the potential mood preſent tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Sing. Edam *I may eat,* edas *thou mayeſt eat,* edat *he may eat*: Plur. Edamus *we may eat,* edatis *ye may eat,* edant *they may eat.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Sing. Ederem vel eſſem *I might eat,* ederes vel eſſes *thou mighteſt eat,* ederet vel eſſet *he might eat*: Plur. Ederemus vel eſſemus *we might eat,* ederetis vel eſſetis *ye might eat,* ederent vel eſſent *they might eat.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Edo *?*

*A.* Sing. Ederim *I might have eaten,* ederis *thou mighteſt have eaten,* ederit *he might have eaten*: Plur. Ederimus *we might have eaten,* ederitis *ye might have eaten,* ederint *they might have eaten.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Sing. Ediſſem *I might have had eaten,* ediſſes *thou mighteſt have had eaten,* ediſſet *he might have had eaten*: Pl. Ediſſemus *we might have had eaten,* ediſſetis *ye might have had eaten,* ediſſent *they might have had eaten.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What is the Potential mood future tenſe of* Edo ?

*A* Sing. Edero *I may eat hereafter*, ederis *thou mayeſt eat hereafter*, ederit *he may eat hereafter* : Plur. Ederimus *we may eat hereafter*, ederitis *ye may eat hereafter*, ederint *they may eat hereafter.*

79. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Edere vel eſſe *to eat.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preter tenſe and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Ediſſe *to have or had eaten.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Edo ?

*A.* Eſurum eſſe *to eat hereafter.*

---

## Fero.

80. Q. WHat *is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Fero ?

*A.* Sing. Fero *I bear or ſuffer*, fers *thou beareſt or ſuffereſt*, fert *he beareth or ſuffereth* : Plur. Ferimus *we bear or ſuffer*, fertis *ye bear or ſuffer*, ferunt *they bear or ſuffer.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Fero ?

*A.* Sing. Ferebam *I did bear or ſuffer*, ferebas *thou didſt bear or ſuffer*, ferebat *he did bear or ſuffer* : Pl. Ferebamus *we did bear or ſuffer*, ferebatis *ye did bear or ſuffer*, ferebant *they did bear or ſuffer.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Fero ?

*A.* Sing. Tuli *I have born or ſuffered*, tuliſti *thou haſt born or ſuffered*, tulit *he hath born or ſuffered* : Plur. tulimus

tulimus *we have born or ſuffered*, tuliſtis *ye have born or ſuffered*, tulerunt vel tulere *they have born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Tuleram *I had born or ſuffered*, tuleras *thou hadſt born or ſuffered*, tulerat *he had born or ſuffered*: Plur. Tuleramus *we had born or ſuffered*, tuleratis *ye had born or ſuffered*, tulerant *they had born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Feram *I ſhall or will bear or ſuffer*, feres *thou ſhalt or wilt bear or ſuffer*, feret *he ſhall or will bear or ſuffer*: Plur. Feremus *we ſhall or will bear or ſuffer*, feretis *ye ſhall or will bear or ſuffer*, ferent *they ſhall or will bear or ſuffer.*

81. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Fer ferto *bear thou, or ſuffer thou*, ferat ferto *let him bear or ſuffer*: Plur. Feramus *let us bear or ſuffer*, ferte fertote *bear ye, or ſuffer ye*, ferant ferunto *let them bear or ſuffer.*

82. Q. *What is the potential mood preſent tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Feram *I may bear or ſuffer*, feras *thou mayeſt bear or ſuffer*, ferat *he may bear or ſuffer*: Plur. Feramus *we may bear or ſuffer*, feratis *ye may bear or ſuffer*, ferant *they may bear or ſuffer.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Ferrem *I might bear or ſuffer*, ferres *thou mighteſt bear or ſuffer*, ferret *he might bear or ſuffer*: Plur. Ferremus *we might bear or ſuffer*, ferretis *ye might bear or ſuffer*, ferrent *they might bear or ſuffer.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing.

*A.* Sing. Tulerim *I might have born or ſuffered,* tuleris *thou mighteſt have born or ſuffered,* tulerit *he might have born or ſuffered:* Plu. Tulerimus *we might have born or ſuffered,* tuleritis *ye might have born or ſuffered,* tulerint *they might have born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Tuliſſem *I might have had born or ſuffered,* tuliſſes *thou mighteſt have had born or ſuffered,* tuliſſet *he might have had born or ſuffered:* Plu. Tuliſſemus *we might have had born or ſuffered,* tuliſſetis *ye might have had born or ſuffered,* tuliſſent *they might have had born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Potential Mood future tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Sing. Tulero *I may bear or ſuffer hereafter,* tuleris *thou mayeſt bear or ſuffer hereafter,* tulerit *he may bear or ſuffer hereafter:* Plu. Tulerimus *we may bear or ſuffer hereafter,* tuleritis *ye may bear or ſuffer hereafter,* tulerint *they may bear or ſuffer hereafter.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Ferre *to bear or ſuffer.*

83 Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Tuliſſe *to have or had born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Fero?

*A.* Laturum eſſe *to bear or ſuffer hereafter.*

## Feror. Feror

84. Q. *What is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Feror ?

*A.* Sing. Feror *I am born or ſuffered,* Ferris vel ferre *thou art born or ſuffered,* fertur *he is born or ſuffered :* Plur. Ferimur *we are born or ſuffered,* ferimini *ye are born or ſuffered,* feruntur *they are born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

*A.* Sing. Ferebar *I was born or ſuffered,* ferebaris vel ferebare *thou waſt born or ſuffered,* ferebatur *he was born or ſuffered :* Plur. Ferebamur *we were born or ſuffered,* ferebamini *ye were born or ſuffered,* ferebantur *they were born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

*A.* Sing. Latus ſum vel fui *I have born or ſuffered,* latus es vel fuiſti *thou haſt been born or ſuffered,* latus eſt vel fuit *he hath been born or ſuffered* : Plur. Lati ſumus vel fuimus *we have been born or ſuffered,* lati eſtis vel fuiſtis *ye have been born or ſuffered,* lati ſunt fuerunt vel fuere *they have been born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

*A.* Sing. Latus eram vel fueram *I had been born or ſuffered,* latus eras vel fueras *thou hadſt been born or ſuffered.* latus erat vel fuerat *he had been born or ſuffered* : Plur. Lati eramus vel fueramus *we had been born or ſuffered,* lati eratis vel fueratis *ye had been born or ſuffered,* lati erant vel fuerant *they had been born or ſuffered.*

Q. *what*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Feror ?

*A.* Sing. Ferar *I ſhall or will be born or ſuffered*, ferēris vel ferere *thou ſhalt or wilt be born or ſuffered*, ferētur *he ſhall or will be born or ſuffered* : Plur. Feremur *we ſhall or will be born or ſuffered*, feremini *ye ſhall or will be born or ſuffered*, ferentur *they ſhall or will be born or ſuffered.*

85 Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Feror ?

*A.* Sing. Ferre ferror *be thou born or ſuffered*, feratur ferror, *let him be born or ſuffered* : Plur. Feramur *let us be born or ſuffered*, feremini feriminor *be ye born or ſuffered*, ferantur feruntor *let them be born or ſuffered.*

86. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Feror ?

*A. Sing.* Ferar *I may be born or ſuffered*, feraris vel ferare *thou mayeſt be born or ſuffered*, feratur *he may be born or ſuffered* : Plur. Feramur *we may be born or ſuffered*, feramini *ye may be born or ſuffered*, ferantur *they may be born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

*A. Sing.* Ferrer *I might be born or ſuffered*, ferreris vel ferrere *thou mighteſt be born or ſuffered*, ferretur *he might be born or ſuffered* : Plur. Ferremur *we might be born or ſuffered*, ferremini *ye might be born or ſuffered*, ferrentur *they might be born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

*A. Sing.* Latus ſim vel fuerim *I might have been born or ſuffered*, latus ſis vel fueris *thou mighteſt have been born or ſuffered*, latus ſit vel fuerit *he might have been born or ſuffered* : Plur. Lati ſimus vel fuerimus *we might have been born or ſuffered*, lati ſitis vel fueritis *ye might have been born or ſuffered*, lati ſint

vel fuerint *they might have been born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the potential mood preterplu-perfect tenſe of* Fero ?

A. Sing. Latus eſſem vel fuiſſem *I might have had been born or ſuffered* latus eſſes vel fuiſſes *you mighteſt have had been born or ſuffered* latus eſſet vel fuiſſet *he might have had been born or ſuffered:* Plur. Lati eſſemus vel fuiſſemus *we might have had been born or ſuffered,* lati eſſetis vel fuiſſetis *ye might have been born or ſuffered,* lati eſſent vel fuiſſent *they might have had been born or ſuffered.*

Q. *What is the potential mood future tenſe of* Feror ?

A. Sing. Latus ero vel fuero *I ſhall or will be born or ſuffered,* latus eris vel fueris *thou ſhalt or wilt be born or ſuffered,* latus erit vel fuerit *he ſhall or will be born or ſuffered:* Plur. Lati erimus vel fuerimus *we ſhall or will be born or ſuffered,* lati eritis vel fueritis *ye ſhall or will be born or ſuffered,* lati erunt vel fuerint *they ſhall or will be born or ſuffered.*

76. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent tenſe and preterimperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

A. Ferri *to be born or ſuffered*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Feror ?

A. Latum eſſe vel fuiſſe *to have or had been born or ſuffered*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood Future tenſe of* Feror ?

A. Latum iri vel ferendum eſſe *to be born or ſuffered hereafter.*

## Fio.

87. Q. WHat *is the Indicative mood preſent tenſe of* Fio ?

*A.* Sing. Fio *I am made or done,* fis *thou art made or done,* fit *he is made or done :* Plur. Fimus *we are made or done,* fitis *ye are made or done,* fiunt *they are made or done.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preter imperfect tenſe of* Fio ?

*A.* Sing. Fiebam *I was made or done,* fiebas *thou waſt made or done,* fiebat *he was made or done :* Plur. Fiebamus *we were made or done,* fiebatis *ye were made or done,* fiebant *they were made or done.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterperfect tenſe of* Fio ?

*A* Sing. Factus ſum vel fui *I have been made or done,* factus es vel fuiſti *thou haſt been made or done,* factus eſt vel fuit *he hath been made or done :* Plur. Facti ſumus vel fuimus *we have been made or done,* facti eſtis vel fuiſtis *ye have been made or done,* facti ſunt fuerunt vel fuere *they have been made or done.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Fio ?

*A.* Sing. Factus eram vel fueram *I had been made or done,* factus eras vel fueras *thou hadſt been made or done,* factus erat vel fuerat *he had been made or done :* Plur. Facti eramus vel fueramus *we had been made or done,* facti eratis vel fueratis *ye had been made or done,* facti erant vel fuerant *they had been made or done.*

Q. *What is the Indicative mood future tenſe of* Fio ?

*A. Sing.* Fiam *I ſhall or will be made or done,* fies *thou ſhalt be made or done,* fiet *he ſhall be made or done:* Plur. Fiemus *we ſhall be made or done,* fietis *ye ſhall be made or done,* fient *they ſhall be made or done.*

88. Q. *What is the Imperative mood preſent tenſe of* Fio ?

*A. Sing.* Fito tu *be thou made or done,* fiat fito *let him be made or done:* Plur. Fiamus *let us be made or done,* fite fiote *be ye made or done,* fiant fiunto *let them be made or done.*

89. Q. *What is the Potential mood preſent tenſe of* Fio ?

*A.* Sing. Fiam *I may be made or done,* fias *thou mayeſt be made or done,* fiat *he may be made or done:* Plur. Fiamus *we may be made,* fiatis *ye may be made or done,* fiant *they may be made or done.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterimperfect tenſe of* Fio ?

*A* Sing. Fierem *I might be made or done,* fieres *thou mighteſt be made or done,* fieret *he might be made or done:* Plur. Fieremus *we might be made or done,* fieretis *ye might be made or done,* fierent *they might be made or done.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterperfect tenſe of* Fio ?

*A. Sing.* Factus ſim vel fuerim *I might have been made or done,* factus ſis vel fueris *thou mighteſt have been made or done.* factus ſit vel fuerit *he might have been made or done:* Plur. Facti ſimus vel fuerimus *we might have been made or done,* facti ſitis vel fueritis *ye might have been made or done,* facti ſint vel fuerint *they might have been made or done.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood preterpluperfect tenſe of* Fio ?

*A. Sing.*

*A.* Sing. Factus eſſem vel fuiſſem *I might have had been made or done*, factus eſſes vel fuiſſes *thou mighteſt have had been made or done*, factus eſſet vel fuiſſet *he might have had been made or done:* Plur. Facti eſſemus vel fuiſſemus *we might have had been made or done*, facti eſſetis vel fuiſſetis *ye might have had been made or done*, facti eſſent vel fuiſſent *they might have had been made or done.*

Q. *What is the Potential mood Future tenſe of* Fio?

*A.* Sing. Factus ero vel fuero *I may be made or done hereafter*, factus eris vel fueris *thou mayeſt be made or done hereafter*, factus erit vel fuerit *he may be made or done hereafter:* Plur. Facti erimus vel fuerimus *we may be made or done hereafter*, facti eritis vel fueritis *ye may be made or done hereafter*, facti erunt vel fuerint *they may be made or done hereafter.*

90. Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preſent and preterimperfect tenſe of* Fio?

*A.* Fieri *to be made or done.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood preterperfect and preterpluperfect tenſe of* Fio?

*A.* Factum eſſe vel fuiſſe *to have or had been made or done.*

Q. *What is the Infinitive mood future tenſe of* Fio?

*A.* Factum iri vel faciendum eſſe *to be made or done hereafter.*

91. Q. *Why is the variation of the Verbs according to the Potential mood only?*

*A.* Becauſe it is ſufficient; for the Optative, the Potential, and the Subjunctive Moods are found all alike in voice, and do differ only in the ſign of the Mood.

92. Q. *What makes* eo *I go*, queo *I can, in the preterimperfect tenſe of the Indicative mood?*

*A.* Ibam *and* quibam.

Q. *What do they make in the Future tenſe?*

*A.* Ibo *and* quibo.

Q. *How are they varied in all other Moods and Tenſes?*

*A.* Like Verbs in *o* of the fourth Conjugation; ſaving that they make their Gerunds, *Eundi, eundo, eundum; Quundi, quendo, quenndum.*

93 Q. *What tenſes are formed of the preterperfect tenſe of the Indicative mood?*

*A.* The Preterpluperfect tenſe of the ſame mood, the Preterperfect, the Preterpluperfect, and the Future tenſe of the Optative, Potential, and the Subjunctive mood, and the Preterpertect and Preterpluperfect tenſe of the Infinitive mood.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A.* Of *amavi*, is formed *amaveram, amavirim, amavero*, by changing *i* into *e* ſhort, and *amaviſſem, amaviſſe*, by keeping *i* ſtill.

94. Q. *How are Verbs Impersonals declined?*

*A.* Impersonals are declined throughout all moods and tenſes in the voice of the third perſon ſingular only.

Q. *Decline* delectat *it delighteth.*

*A.* Indic. Delectat, delectabat, delectavit, delectaverat, delectabit. Imperat. Delectet, delectato. Potent. Delectet, delectaret, delectaverit, delectaviſſet, delectaverit. Infinit. Delectare, delectaviſſe, delectaturum eſſe.

Q. *Decline* Decet *it becometh*

*A.* Indic. Decet, decebat, decuit, decuerat, decebit. Imperat. Deceat, decetо. Potent. Deceat, deceret, decuerit, decuiſſet, decuerit. Infinit. Decere, decuiſſe.

Q. *Decline it is ſtudied.*

*A.* Indic. Studetur, ſtudebatur, ſtuditum eſt vel fuit,

fuit, ſtuditum erat vel fuerat, ſtudebitur. Imperat. Studeatur, ſtudetor. Potent. Studeatur, ſtuderetur, ſtuditum ſit vel fuerit, ſtuditum eſſet vel fuiſſet, ſtuditum erit vel fuerit. Infinit. Studeri, ſtuditum eſſe vel fuiſſe.

Q. *How are Impersonals known in Engliſh?*

*A.* They have commonly before their Engliſh this ſign *it*; as, *Delectat* it delighteth, *Non decet* it becometh not.

---

## IV. Of the Participle.

1. Q. *WHat is a Participle?*

*A.* A Participle is a part of ſpeech derived of a Verb, and taketh part of a Noun, as Gender, Caſe, and Declenſion; and part of a Verb, as tenſe and ſignification; and part of both, as number and figure.

2. Q. *How many kinds of Participles are there?*

*A.* Four.

Q. *Which be the four kinds of Participles?*

*A.* One of the Preſent tenſe, another of the Preter tenſe, one of the Future in *rus*, and another of the Future in *dus*.

3. Q. *How know you a Participle of the preſent tenſe?*

*A.* A Participle of the preſent tenſe hath its Engliſh ending in *ing*: as *loving*, and its Latin in *ans* or *ens*; as *amans* loving, *docens* teaching.

Q. *Whence is the Participle of the preſent tenſe formed?*

*A.* Of the preterimperfect tenſe of the Indicative mood, by changing the laſt ſyllable into *ns*, as *amabam* I did love, *amans* loving. *Audiebam* I did hear, *audiens* hearing. *Poteram* I was able, *potens* being able.

4. Q. *How*

4. Q. *How know you a Participle of the Future in* rus ?

*A.* A Participle of the future in *rus* betokeneth to do, like the Infinitive mood of the active voice; as, *amaturus* to love, or about to love.

Q. *How is the Participle of the Future in* rus *formed* ?

*A.* Of the latter Supine, by putting to *rus*, as *doctu* to be taught, *docturus* about to teach.

5. Q. *How know you a Participle of the Preter tenſe* ?

*A.* A Participle of the preter tenſe hath its Engliſh ending in *d*, *t*, or *n*; as, *loved*, *taught*, *ſlain*; and its Latin in *tus*, *ſus*, *xus*; as, *amatus* loved, *viſus* ſeen, *nexus* knit; and one in *uus*, as *mortuus* dead.

Q. *Whence is the Participle of the Preter tenſe formed* ?

*A.* Of the latter Supine, by putting to *s*; as of *lectu* to be read, *lectus* read, except *mortuus*.

6. Q. *How know you the Participle of the Future in* dus ?

*A.* The Participle of the Future in *dus*, betokeneth to ſuffer, like the Infinitive mood of the paſſive voice; as *amandus* to be loved.

Q. *Whence is the Participle of the Future in* dus *formed* ?

*A.* Of the Genitive caſe of the Participle of the preſent tenſe, by changing *tis* into *dus*; as, *amantis* of loving, *amandus* to be loved.

Q. *What ſignification elſe is it found to have* ?

*A.* Of the Participle of the preſent tenſe; as, *Legendis veteribus proficis*, In reading old Authors thou doſt profit.

8. Q. *How many Participles come of a Verb Active and of a Verb Neuter, which hath the Supines* ?

*A.* Two; one of the preſent tenſe, and another of the future in *rus*; as, of *amo* I love, cometh *amans* loving,

loving, *amaturus* about to love; of *curro* I run, *curreas* running, *curſurus* about to run.

Q. *How many Participles come of a Verb Paſſive, whoſe Active hath the Supines?*

*A.* Two; one of the Preter tenſe, and another of the future in *dus*; as of *amor* I am loved, cometh *amatus* loved, *amandus* to be loved.

8. Q. *How many Participles come of a Verb Deponent?*

*A.* Three; one of the preſent tenſe, one of the preter tenſe, and another of the future in *rus*; as of *auxilior* I aid, cometh *auxilians* aiding, *auxiliatus* aided, *auxiliaturus* about to aid.

Q. *What if a Verb Deponent do govern an Accuſative caſe after him?*

*A.* Then it may form alſo a Participle in *dus*; as of *loquor* I ſpeak, *loquendus* to be ſpoken.

9 Q. *How many Participles come of a Verb Commune?*

*A.* Four: as of *largior* to beſtow, cometh *largiens* beſtowing, *largiturus* about to beſtow, *largitus* beſtowed, and *largiendus* to be beſtowed.

10. Q. *How are Participles of the preſent tenſe declined?*

*A.* Like Nouns Adjectives of three Articles; as *Nom. hic hæc & hoc Amans, Gen. hujus amantis, Dat. huic amanti*, &c.

Q. *How are Participles of other tenſes declined?*

*A.* Like Nouns Adjectives of three divers endings, as *Amaturus, amatura, amaturum*, &c. *Amatus, amata, amatum*, &c. *Amandus, amanda, amandum.*

V. Of

## V. Of an Adverb.

1. Q. *What is an Adverb?*

*A.* An Adverb is a part of Speech joyned to the Verb, to declare their ſignification.

Q. *What Adverbs be of time?*

*A.* Hodie *to day*, cras *to morrow*, heri *yeſterday*, perindie *the next day after to morrow*, olim *in time paſt*, aliquando *ſometimes*, nuper *lately*, quando *when*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of place?*

*A.* Ubi *where*, ibi *there*, hic *here*, iſtic *there*, illic *there*, intus *within*, foris *without*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of number?*

*A.* Semel *once*, bis *twice*, ter *thrice*, quater *four times*, iterum *again*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of order?*

*A.* Inde *thence*, deinde *afterwards*, denique *laſtly*, poſtremo *laſt of all*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of asking or doubting?*

*A.* Cur *wherefore* quare *wherefore*, unde *from whence*, quorſum *to what end*, num *whether*, numquid *whether*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of calling?*

*A.* Heus *oh*, ô *ſo ho*, chodum *come hither a little*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of affirming?*

*A.* Certe *certainly*, næ *truly*, profecto *truly*, ſane *yes indeed*, videlicet *yes forſooth*, licet *be it ſo*, eſto *let it be ſo*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of denying?*

*A.* Non *no*, haud *ſcarcely*, minime *no*, ne quam *at no hand*, nequaquam *in no wiſe*.

Q. *What Adverbs be of exhorting?*

*A.* Eia

A. Eia *well*, age *go to*, agito *go ye on*, agedum *go to a little.*

Q. *What Adverbs be of flattering?*

A. Sodes I *pray thee*, amabo *of all loves.*

Q. *What Adverb is of forbidding?*

A. Ne *not.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of wishing?*

A. Utinam *I wish* si *if I might*, ô si *O that*, ô *oh.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of gathering together?*

A. Simul *together*, unà *in one*, non modo *not only*, non solum *not only.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of parting?*

A. Seorsim *asunder*, sigillatim *severally*, vicatim *street by street.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of chusing?*

A. Potius *rather*, imo *yea rather.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of a thing not finished?*

A. Pene *almost*, fere *almost*, prope *near*, vix *scarcely*, modo non *almost.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of shewing?*

A. En *lo*, ecce *behold.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of doubting?*

A. Forsan *peradventure*, forsitan *perhaps*, fortassis *it may be*, fortasse *as it may fall out.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of chance?*

A. Forte *as hap was*, fortuito *at adventure.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of likeness?*

A. Sic *so*, sicut *as*, quasi *as if*, ceu *as*, velut *like as.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of quality?*

A. Bene *well*, male *ill*, docte *learnedly*, fortiter *valiantly.*

Q. *What Adverbs are of quantity?*

A. Multum *much*, parum *little* minimum *very little*, paululum *little*, plurimum *very much?*

Q. *What Adverbs are of comparison?*

A. Tam

*A.* Tam *ſo*, quam *as*, magis *more*, minus *leſs*, maxime *moſt of all.*

2. Q. *What Adverbs are compared?*

*A.* Certain that are derived from Nouns Adjectives and Prepoſitions.

Q. *Give ſome Examples.*

*A.* Docte *learnedly*, doctius *more learnedly*, doctiſſime *very learnedly*, *of* doctus *learned*: fortiter *valiantly*, fortius *more valiantly*, fortiſſime *very valiantly*, *of* fortis *valiant.*

Prope *near*, propius *nearer*, proxime *next*, *of* prope *nigh.*

3. Q. *When are Prepoſitions changed into Adverbs?*

*A.* When they be ſet alone, not having any caſual word to ſerve unto, joyned with them.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Qui ante non cavet poſt dolebit*, he that bewareth not afore, ſhall be ſorry afterwards. *Coram laudare, clam vituperare, inhoneſtum eſt*; in preſence to commend one, and behind his back to diſpraiſe him, is an unhoneſt point.

---

## VI. Of a Conjunction.

1. Q. *WHat is a Conjunction?*

*A.* A Conjunction is a part of Speech that joyneth words and ſentences together.

2. Q. *What Conjunctions are Copulatives?*

*A.* Et *and*, que *and*, quoque *alſo*, ac *and*, atque *and*, nec *neither*, neque *neither.*

Q. *What Conjunctions are Disjunctives?*

*A.* Aut *or*, ve *or*, vel *either*, ſeu *or*, ſive *whether.*

Q. *What Conjunctions are Diſcretives?*

*A.* Sed

*A.* Sed *but*, quidem *truly*, autem *but*, vero *but*, at *but*, aſt *but*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Cauſals?*

*A.* Nam *for*, namque *for*, enim *for*, etenim *for*, quia *becauſe*, ut *that*, quod *becauſe*, quum *ſeeing that*, quoniam *becauſe*, *and* quando *ſet for* quoniam *becauſe*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Conditionals?*

*A.* Si *if*, ſin *but if*, modo *ſo that*, dum *ſo that*, dummodo *ſo that*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Exceptives?*

*A.* Ni *unleſs*, niſi *except*, quin *but*, alroquin *otherwiſe*, præterquam *ſaving*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Interrogatives?*

*A.* Ne *whether or no*, utrum *whether*, necne *whether or no*, anne *is it or no*, nonne *is it not*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Illatives?*

*A* Ergo *therefore*, ideo *therefore*, igitur *therefore*, quare *wherefore*, itaque *and ſo*, proin *therefore*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Adverſatives?*

*A.* Etſi *although*, quanquam *although*, quamvis *although*, licet *albeit*, eſto *ſuppoſe it be ſo*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Redditives?*

*A.* Tamen *yet*, attamen *notwithſtanding*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Electives?*

*A.* Quam *as*, ac *as*, atque *as*.

Q. *What Conjunctions are Diminutives?*

*A.* Saltem *at the leaſt*, vel *even*.

---

## VII. Of a Preposition.

1. Q. WHat *is a Prepoſition?*

*A.* A Prepoſition is a part of Speech moſt commonly ſet before other parts.

2. Q. *How*

2. Q. *How is a Preposition set before other parts of Speech?*

*A.* Either in Appositon, as, *ad patrem*; or else in composition, as, *Indoctus*.

3. Q. *Which Prepositions serve to an Accusative case?*

*A.* These following: *viz.* Ad *to*, apud *at*, ante *before*, adversus, adversum *against*, cis, citra *on this side*, circum, circa *about*, contra *against*, ergà *towards*, extra *without*, intra *within*, inter *between*, infra *beneath*, juxta *beside or nigh to*, ob *for*, pone *behind*, per *by or through*, propè *nigh*, propter *for*, (*or because of*) secundum *after*, *or according to*, post *after*, trans *on the further side*, *or over*, ultra *beyond*, præter *beside*, supra *above*, circiter *about*, usque *until*, secus *by*, versus *towards*, te penes *in thy power*.

4. Q. *Which of these Prepositions are set after their casual word?*

*A.* Versus *and* penes, *as*, Londinum versus *towards London*, te penes *in thy power*.

5. Q. *Which Prepositions serve to an Ablative case?*

*A.* These following: *viz.* A, ab, abs, *from or fro*, cum *with*, coram *before*, *or in presence*, clam *privily*, de è, ex, *of*, *or fro*, pro *for*, præ *before*, *or in comparison*, palam *openly*, sine *without*, absque *without*, tenus *until*, *or up to*

Q. *What if the casual word joyned with* tenus *be of the plural number?*

*A.* Then it shall be put in the Genitive case, and be set before *tenus*. as, *Auriam tenus* up to the ears, *Genuum tenus* up to the knees.

6. Q. *When are Prepositions turned into Adverbs?*

*A.* When they are set alone without their casual words.

7. Q. *What*

7. Q. *What Prepoſitions ſerve to both Caſes?*

*A.* In, ſub, ſuper, *and* ſubter.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. In* with this ſign *to*, to the Accuſative caſe; as, *In urbem*, Into the City. *In* without the ſign *to*, to the Ablative; as, *In te ſpes eſt*, My hope is in thee.

*Sub noctem*, A little before night.

*Sub Judice lis eſt*, The matter is before the Judge.

*Super lapidem*, Upon a ſtone.

*Super viridi fronde*, Upon a green branch.

*Subter terram*, Under the earth.

*Subter aquis*, Under the water.

---

## VIII. Of an Interjection.

1. Q. *What is an Interjection?*

*A.* An Interjection is a part of Speech which betokeneth a ſudden paſſion of the mind under an imperfect voice.

Q. *What Interjections are of mirth?*

*A. Evax*, hey brave! *vah* ho.

Q. *What Interjections are of ſorrow?*

*A. Heu* alas, *hei* weladay.

Q. *What Interjection of dread?*

*A. Atat* aha.

Q. *What Interjection is of marvelling?*

*A. Papæ* O ſtrange!

Q. *What Interjections are of diſdaining?*

*A. Hem* oh, *vah* away.

Q. *What Interjection is of ſhunning?*

*A. Apage* avaunt.

Q. *What Interjection is of praiſing?*

*A. Euge* well done.

Q. *What Interjection is of ſcorning?*

*A.* Hui *whoo.*

Q. *What Interjection is of exclaiming?*

*A.* Proh *ô*; *as* proh fidem *O the faith,* deûm *of the gods,* atque *and,* hominum *of men.*

Q. *What Interjections are of curſing?*

*A.* Væ *wo,* malùm *with a miſchief.*

Q. *What Interjections are of laughing?*

*A.* Ha, ha, he.

Q. *What Interjections are of calling?*

*A.* Eho *ſoho,* oh *ho,* io *avoy.*

Q. *What Interjection is of ſilence?*

*A.* Au *whiſht.*

THE

THE

# Conſtruction

OF THE

## Eight Parts of SPEECH:

OR,

## *The Second Part*

Of the Common

# ACCIDENCE

Examined and Explained.

AND

The *Examples* applied to the *Rules*,

BY

## *Queſtions* and *Anſwers*

According to the

WORDS of the BOOK.

---

John Dyck

Mary Curtis

1751 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8

Dycke junk Dycke

# The CONSTRUCTION Of the Eight Parts of SPEECH: OR, The Second Part of the ACCIDENCE EXAMINED and EXPLAINED By ſhort Queſtions and Anſwers.

## The CONCORDS of Latin Speech.

QUEST.

FOR *the due joyning of words in Conſtruction, how many Concords are there in Latin Speech?*

*A.* Three.

Q. *What is the firſt Concord between?*

*A.* The firſt Concord is between the Nominative caſe and the Verb.

Q. *What is the ſecond Concord between?*

*A.* The ſecond Concord is between the Subſtantive and the Adjective.

Q. *What is the third Concord between?*

*A.* The third Concord is between the Antecedent and the Relative.

## The firſt Concord.

Queſt. *When an Engliſh is given to be made in Latin, what muſt be do?*

*A.* Look out the principal Verb.

Q. *What if there be more Verbs than one in a Sentence?*

*A.* Then the firſt is the principal Verb.

Q. *When is not the firſt Verb the principal Verb?*

*A.* 1. When it is the Infinitive mood, or 2. when it hath before it a Relative; as, *that*, *whom*, *which*; or 3. a *Conjunction*; as, *ut* that, *cum* when, *ſi* if, and ſuch others.

Q. *When one hath found the Verb, what muſt he do to find the Nominative caſe?*

*A.* Aſk this queſtion *who*, or *what*, and the word that anſwereth to the queſtion ſhall be the Nominative caſe to the Verb.

Q. *But what Verb will have no Nominative caſe?*

*A.* A Verb Impersonal.

Q. *How ſhall the Nominative caſe be ſet in making or conſtruing Latine?*

*A.* The Nominative caſe ſhall be ſet before the Verb.

Q. *But when ſhall the Nominative caſe be ſet after the Verb or the ſign of the Verb.*

*A.* 1. When a queſtion is asked; as, *Amas tu?* Loveſt thou? *Venit ne Rex?* Doth the King come? 2. When the Verb is of the Imperative mood; as, *Ama tu*, Love thou, *amato ille* let him love. 3. When this ſign *it* or *there*, cometh before the Engliſh of the Verb; as, *Eſt liber meus*, It is my Book; *Venit ad me quidam*, There came one to me.

Q. *What caſe ſhall the caſual word be, which cometh next after the Verb, and anſwereth to the queſtion* whom, *or* what, *made by the Verb?*

*A.* Commonly the Accuſative caſe.

Q. *But when ſhall it not be the Accuſative caſe?*

*A.* When the Verb doth properly govern another caſe after him to be conſtrued withal.

Qu. *Give an example.*

*A.* Si cupis placere magiſtro, utere diligentia, nec ſi tantus ceſſator, ut calcaribus indigeas, *If thou covet to pleaſe thy Maſter, uſe diligence, and be not ſo ſlack,*

that

*that thou ſhalt need Spurs.* In this example *magiſtro* is the Dative caſe governed of *placere*, *diligentia* is the Ablative caſe governed of *utere*, *ceſſator* is the Nominative caſe governed of *ſis*; and *calcaribus* is the Ablative caſe governed of *indigeas*, becauſe thoſe Verbs properly govern ſuch caſes.

Q. *How doth a Verb Perſonal agree with its Nominative caſe?*

A. In number and perſon; as, *Præceptor legit, vos vero negligitis*, The Maſter readeth, and ye regard not. *Præceptor* and *legit* are of the ſingular number, and the third perſon, and *vos negligitis* of the plural number and ſecond perſon.

Q. *What muſt we note here concerning the perſon?*

*A.* That the firſt perſon is more worthy than the ſecond, and the ſecond more worthy than the third.

1. Q. *What Verb will many Nominative Caſes ſingular have, with a Conjunction Copulative coming between them?*

*A.* A Verb plural.

Q. *With which Nominative Caſe then ſhall the Verb agree?*

*A.* With the Nominative caſe of the moſt worthy Perſon.

Q. *Give two or three examples.*

*A. Ego & tu ſumus in tuto*, I and thou be in ſafety. In which Example the two Nominative caſes ſingular *ego* and *tu*, with the Conjunction *&* between them, require a Verb plural *ſumus*, which agreeth with the Nominative caſe *ego* in perſon, becauſe the firſt perſon is more worthy than the ſecond.

*Tu & Pater periclitamini*, Thou and thy Father are in jeopardy. Here *Tu* the Nominative caſe of the ſecond perſon, and *Pater* the Nominative caſe of the third, having a Conjunction between them, do cauſe the Verb *periclitamini* to be of the plural number, and it is of

the ſecond perſon agreeing with *tu*, becauſe the ſecond perſon is more worthy than the third.

*Pater & Præceptor accerſunt te*, The Father and the Maſter have ſent for thee. *Pater & Præceptor* are the two Nominative caſes ſingular of the third perſon, with a Conjunction betwixt them; which require the Verb *accerſunt* to be of the plural number, and the third perſon, as they both are.

Q. *What if a Verb cometh between two Nominative caſes of divers numbers?*

*A.* Then it may indifferently agree with either of them, ſo they be both of one perſon; as, *Amantium iræ, amoris redintegratio eſt*, The falling out of Lovers is the renewing of love.

*Eſt* being ſet between the two Nominative caſes, *iræ* of the plural, and *redintegratio* of the ſingular number, agrees with *redintegratio*.

*Quid enim niſi vota ſuperſunt?* For what remaineth ſaving only prayers? *Superſunt* being ſet between the two Nominative caſes, *quid* and *vota*, agreeth with *vota*, which is the latter of them.

*Pectora percuſſit, pectus quoque robora fiunt:* She ſtroke her breſt, and her breſt turned into oak alſo.

*Fiunt* being ſet between *pectus* and *robora*, agreeth with *robora*, which is the latter Nominative caſe.

Q. *What may be ſometime the Nominative caſe of a Verb, inſtead of a caſual word?*

*A.* The Infinitive mood of a Verb, or elſe a whole clauſe aforegoing, or elſe ſome member of a Sentence; as, *Diluculo ſurgere ſalubberrimum eſt*, To riſe betime in the morning is the moſt wholeſom thing in the world.

Here *Diluculo ſurgere* is the Nominative caſe to the Verb *eſt*. *Multum ſcire eſt vita jucundiſſima*, To know much is the moſt pleaſant (or ſweeteſt) life of all. *Multum ſcire* is the Nominative caſe to the Verb *eſt*.

The

## The ſecond Concord.

Qu. *When one hath an Adjective, what muſt he do to find out its Subſtantive?*

*A.* [illegible] the queſtion *who* or *what*; and the word that anſwereth to the queſtion ſhall be the Subſtantive to it.

Q. *How doth the Adjective (whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle) agree with its Subſtantive?*

*A.* In caſe, gender, and number; as, *Amicus certus in re incerta cernitur:* A ſure friend is tried in a doubtful matter: *Amicus certus* are of the Maſculine gender, ſingular number, and Nominative caſe, *Re incerta* are of the Feminine gender, and the Ablative caſe.

*Homo armatus*, A man armed: *Armatus* is a Participle of the ſingular number, Maſculine gender, and Nominative caſe, and agreeth with its Subſtantive *Homo*. *Ager colendus*, A field to be tilled. *Colendus* is a Participle in *dus* of the Maſculine Gender, ſingular Number, and Nominative Caſe, agreeing with *ager*. *Hic vir*, this man. *Hic* is a Pronoun Adjective of the Maſculine gender, ſingular number, and Nominative caſe, agreeing with *Vir*. *Meus herus eſt*, It is my Maſter. *Meus herus* are of the Maſculine Gender, ſingular Number, and the Nominative Caſe.

Q. *What is to be noted concerning the Gender?*

*A.* That the Maſculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine, and the Feminine more worthy than the Neuter.

Q. *What Adjective will many Subſtantives ſingular have, having a Conjunction Copulative coming between them?*

A. An

*A.* An Adjective plural.

*Q. With which Substantive then shall that Adjective agree?*

*A.* With the Substantive of the most worthy Gender; as, *Rex & Regina beati.* The King and the Queen are blessed: *where the Adjective* beati *is of the plural number, because there are two Substantives* Rex a[illegible]gina, *with & between them; and it is of the Masculine Gender, agreeing with* Rex, *which is the more worthy, and Nominative case, because the Substantives are so.*

---

## The third Concord.

Qu. *When one hath a Relative, what must he do to find out its Antecedent?*

*A.* Ask the question *who*, or *what*, and the word that answereth to the question shall be the Antecedent to it.

*Q. What is the Antecedent?*

*A.* The Antecedent most commonly is a word that goeth before the Relative, and is rehearsed again of the Relative.

*Q. How doth the Relative agree with its* Antecedent?

A. In Gender, Number, and Person; as, *Vir sapit, qui pauca loquitur*, The man is wise, that speaketh few things or words.

*Qui* the Relative is of the Masculine Gender, singular number, and third person, because *Vir* the Antecedent is so.

*Q. What if the Relative have for its* Antecedent *the whole reason (or sentence) that goeth before him?*

A. Then the Relative shall be put in the Neuter Gender, and singular number: as, *In tempore veni quod*

*quod omnium rerum eſt primum*, I came in ſeaſon which is the chiefeſt thing of all. *Here* quod *is of the Neuter Gender and ſingular number, becauſe the reaſon* in tempore veni, *is preſumed to be ſo.*

Q. *But what if the Relative be referred to two clauſes or more?*

*A.* Then the Relative ſhall be put in the plural number [illegible] *Tu multum dormis, & ſæpe potas, quæ ambo ſunt [illegible]ri inimica*, Thou ſleepeſt much, and drinkeſt often, both which things are naught for the body. *Here the Relative* quæ *is put in the plural number, becauſe it is referred to the two clauſes aforegoing*, Tu multum dormis, & ſæpe potas.

Q. *When is this Engliſh* that, *a Relative?*

*A.* When it may be turned into this Engliſh *which*, otherwiſe it is a Conjunction, which in Latin is called *quod* or *ut*.

Q. *How may it be elegantly put away in making Latin?*

*A.* By turning the Nominative caſe into the Accuſative, and the Verb into the Infinitive mood.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A.* Gaudeo quod tu bene vales, gaudeo te bene valere, *I am glad that thou art in good health The Conjunction* quod *is put away, and the Nominative caſe* tu *is turned into the Accuſative caſe* te, *and the Verb* vales *into the Infinitive Mood* valere. Jubeo ut tu abeas, jubeo, te abire, *I bid that thou go hence.* Ut *is put away and the Nominative caſe* tu *changed into the Accuſative* te, *and the Verb* abeas *into the Infinitive Mood* abire.

Q. *What Relative will many Antecedents ſingular have, having a Conjunction Copulative between them?*

*A.* A Relative plural, which ſhall agree with the Antecedent of the moſt worthy Gender.

Q. 1. *Give*

Q. *Give an Example.*

A. *Habuit equum & mulam quos vendidit.* He had a Horſe and a Mule, which he ſold.

The Relative *quos* having two Antecedents before it of divers Genders, *equum* and *mulam*, is therefore of the plural number, and agrees with *equum* in Gender, becauſe the Maſculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine.

Q. *But why do you not give the Example which is ſet down in the Accidence*, Imperium & dignitas quæ petiiſti, *The Rule and Dignity which thou haſt required?*

A. Becauſe that Example doth not fitly anſwer to the Rule, but rather to the next that followeth.

Q. 1. *But in what things is the Neuter Gender moſt worthy?*

A. In things not apt to have life; yea, and in ſuch a caſe, though the Subſtantives and Antecedents be of the Maſculine or of the Feminine Gender, and none of them of the Neuter, yet may the Adjective or Relative be put in the Neuter Gender.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. *Arcus & Calami ſunt bona.*

The Adjective *bona* is of the Neuter Gender, though both the Subſtantives *arcus* and *calami* be Maſculine, becauſe they ſignifie things not apt to have life. *Arcus & calami quæ fregiſti*, The Bow and Arrows which thou haſt broken.

The Relative *quæ* is of the Neuter Gender, though the Antecedents be both of the Maſculine; becauſe they ſignifie things without life.

The

## The Caſe of the Relative.

Q. *When ſhall the Relative be the Nominative caſe to the Verb?*

A. When there cometh no Nominative caſe between the Relative and the Verb; as, *Miſer eſt qui nummos admiratur*, Wretched is that perſon which is in love with money. *Qui* is the Nominative caſe coming before the Verb *admiratur*, becauſe there cometh no Nominative caſe betwixt them.

Q. *But when there cometh a Nominative caſe between the Relative and the Verb, what caſe ſhall the Relative be?*

A. Such caſe as the Verb will have after him; as, *Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum:* Happy is he whom other mens harms do make to beware.

*Quem* is the Accuſative caſe, becauſe *faciunt* will have an Accuſative caſe after it, and *pericula* comes between *quem* and *faciunt* in conſtruing.

Q. *Can the Relative be the Subſtantive to the Adjective that is joyned with him, or cometh after him?*

A. Yes, as well as it may be the Nominative caſe to the Verb; as, *Divitias amare noli, quod omnium eſt ſordidiſſimum:* Love not thou Riches, which to do is the moſt beggarly thing in the world.

*Sordidiſſimum* is an Adjective of the Neuter gender, Nominative caſe, and ſingular number, which agrees with the Relative *quod* put for a Subſtantive.

Q. *What Nouns follow the Rule of the Relative?*

A. Nouns Interrogatives and Indefinites; as, *Quis* who, *uter* whether, *qualis* what one, *quantus* how great, *quotus* how many, *&c.* which evermore come

come before the Verb, like as the Relative doth.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. Hei mihi, qualis erat, *Wo is me, what one is he?* Talis erat, qualem nunquam vidi, *He was such a one as I never saw.*

Qualis, talis, *and* qualem, *go before the Verbs* erat *and* vidi, *as the Relative useth to do.*

Q. *Is the Relative always governed of the Verb that it cometh before?*

A. No, but sometimes of another word in the same sentence.

Q. *Of what then is the Relative governed?*

A. Sometimes of the Infinitive mood that cometh after the Verb; as, *Quibus voluisti me gratias agere, egi:* What persons thou willedst me to thank, I have thanked.

*Quibus* is the Dative case governed of *agere.*

Q. *What else is the Relative governed of?*

A. Sometimes of a Participle; as, *Quibus rebus adductus id feciſti:* With what things moved didst thou it?

*Quibus rebus* is the Ablative case governed of *adductus.*

Q. *Of what else?*

A. Sometimes of a Gerund; as, *Quæ nunc non eſt narrandi locus:* Which things at this present is no time to tell.

*Quæ* is the Accusative case governed of *narrandi.*

Q. *Of what else?*

A. Sometimes of the Preposition set before him; as, *Quem in locum deducta res ſit, vides:* Unto what state the matter is now brought, thou seest. *Quem locum* is the Accusative case, govern'd of the Preposition *in.*

Q. *Of what else?*

A. Sometimes of the Substantive that it doth accord with; as, *Senties, qui vir ſiem,* Thou shalt perceive what a fellow I am. *Qui* agreeth with its Substantive *Vir* in case, gender, and number.

Q. *But*

Q. *But is* qui *a Relative in this manner of ſpeaking?*

*A.* No, it is rather an Indefinite.

Q. *Of what elſe is the Relative governed?*

*A.* Sometimes of a Noun Partitive or Diſtributive: as, *Quarum rerum utram minus velim, non facilè poſſum exiſtimare*: Of the which two things whether I would with leſs will have, I cannot eaſily eſteem.

*Quarum rerum* are the Genitive caſe, and Plural number governed of *utram*.

Q. *Why is the Relative ſometimes uſed in the Genitive caſe?*

*A.* By reaſon of a Subſtantive coming next after him; as, *Ego illum non novi, cujus cauſâ hoc incipis*, I knew him not for whoſe cauſe thou beginneſt this matter.

*Cujus* is the Genitive caſe governed of the Subſtantive *cauſa* that cometh next after him.

Q. *Is it not otherwiſe governed of a Subſtantive?*

*A.* Yes, ſometimes; as, *Omnia tibi dabuntur quibus opus habes*: All things ſhall be given thee which thou haſt need of.

*Quibus* is the ablative caſe governed of *opus*.

Q. *How elſe is the Relative governed?*

*A.* Sometimes of an Adverb; as, *Cui utrum obviam procedam, nondum ſtatui*, Whom whether I will go to meet with, I have not yet determined.

*Cui* is the Dative caſe governed of the Adverb *obviam*.

Q. *Of what is the Relative governed, when it is put in the Ablative caſe, with this ſign* than?

*A.* Of the comparative degree coming after him; as *Mere virtute, quâ nihil eſt melius*, Uſe vertue, than the which nothing is better.

*Qua* is the Ablative caſe governed of *melius*, which is an Adjective of the comparative degree.

Q. *When is the Relative not governed at all?*

*A.* When

*A.* When it is put in the Ablative caſe abſolute; as, *Quantus erat Julius Cæſar, quo Imperatore, Romani primum Britanniam ingreſſi ſunt?* How worthy a man was *Julius Cæſar*, under whoſe Conduct the Romans firſt entred into *Britain*?

*Quo Imperatore* is the Ablative caſe abſolute.

Q. *When elſe is the Relative put in the Ablative caſe?*

*A.* When it ſignifieth an Inſtrument wherewith a thing is to be done; as, *Ferrum habuit, quo ſe occideret*: He had a knife wherewith he would have ſlain himſelf. *Quo* is the Ablative caſe of the Inſtrument governed of *occideret*.

Q. *What if a Relative come between two Subſtantives of divers Genders?*

*A.* It may indifferently accord with either of them.

Q. *Give an Example or two.*

*A. Avis quæ Paſſer appellatur*, or, *Avis qui Paſſer appellatur*: The Bird which is called a Sparrow. The Relative *quæ* agrees with the former Antecedent *avis*, and *qui* with *paſſer* the latter.

*Eſtne ea Lutetia quam nos Pariſios dicimus?* or, *Eſtne ea Lutetia quos nos Pariſios dicimus?* Is not that *Lutetia* that we do call *Paris*? The Relative *quam* agreeth with the former Antecedent *Lutetia*, and *quos* with *Pariſios* the latter.

---

## Conſtructions of Nouns Subſtantives.

Q. *When two Subſtantives come together betokening divers things, what caſe ſhall the latter be?*

*A.* The Latter of two Subſtantives ſhall be the Genitive Caſe; as *Facundia Ciceronis*, The eloquence of

of *Cicero*. *Opus Virgilii* the work of *Virgil*. *Amator ſtudiorum*, A Lover of Studies. *Dogma Platonis*, The opinion of *Plato*.

In all which examples are two Subſtantives, whereof the latter is the Genitive caſe.

Q. *But what if two Subſtantives belong both to one thing?*

*A.* If two Subſtantives belong both to one thing, they ſhall be put both in one caſe; as, *Pater meus vir, amat me puerum*, My father being a man, loveth me a child.

*Pater* and *vir* belong both to one thing, and are both in the Nominative caſe; and *me puerum* belong both to one thing, and are put in the Accuſative caſe.

Q. *When the Engliſh of this word* Res (*viz. thing*) *is put with an Adjective, how may one make it in Latin?*

*A.* One may put away *res*, (thing) and put the Adjective in the Neuter Gender like a Subſtantive, as, *Multa me impedierunt*, Many things have letted me.

*Multa* the Adjective is put in the Neuter Gender by leaving out *res*; for we do not ſay, *multæ res*, many things; but *multa*.

Q. *What may an Adjective be, when it is put in the Neuter Gender?*

*A.* An Adjective put in the Neuter Gender, may be a Subſtantive to an Adjective; as, *Pauca his ſimilia*, A few things like unto theſe. *Pauca* being put in the neuter Gender, is the Subſtantive to *ſimilia* that agreeth with it. *Nonnulla hujuſmodi*, Many things of like ſort. *Nonnulla* being but in the Neuter Gender, is the Subſtantive to *hujuſmodi*.

Q. *What if an Adjective of the Neuter Gender be put alone without a Subſtantive?*

*A.* Then it ſtandeth for a Subſtantive, and may have a Genitive Caſe after him, as if it were a Subſtantive;

as *Multum lucri*, Much gain. *Multum* governs the Genitive caſe *lucri*. *Quantum negotii?* How much buſineſs? *Quantum* governs the Genitive caſe *negotii*. *Id operis*, that work. *Id* governs the Genitive caſe *operis*.

Q. *In what caſe may words be put that import indowment of any quality or property, to the praiſe or diſpraiſe of a thing, coming after a Noun Subſtantive or a Verb Subſtantive?*

*A.* In the Ablative or Genitive caſe; as, *Puer bona indole*, or *puer bonæ indolis*, A child of good towardneſs. *Bona indole* is the Ablative caſe governed of *Puer*, and *bonæ indolis* the Genitive. *Puer boni ingenii*, or *Puer bono ingenio*, A child of good wit. *Boni ingenii* is the Genitive caſe, and *bono ingenio* is the Ablative caſe governed of *Puer*.

Q. *What caſe do* opus *and* uſus *require?*

*A.* When *opus* and *uſus* be Latin for need, they require an Ablative caſe; as, *Opus eſt mihi tuo judicio*, I have need of thy judgment. *Tuo judicio* is the Ablative caſe governed of *opus*. *Viginti minis uſus eſt filio*, My ſon hath need of twenty pounds. *Viginti minis* is the Ablative caſe governed of *uſus*.

---

## Conſtructions of Adjectives.

### *The Genitive Caſe.*

Qu. WHat *Adjectives require a Genitive Caſe?*

*A.* Adjectives that ſignifie deſire, knowledge, remembrance, ignorance, or forgetting, and ſuch other like.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Cupidus auri*, Covetous of money.

*Auri* is the Genitive caſe governed of *cupidus*, which ſignifieth

ſignifieth deſire. *Peritus belli*, Expert of warfare. *Belli* is the Genitive caſe governed of *Peritus*, which ſignifieth knowledge. *Ignarus omnium*, Ignorant of all things. *Omnium* is the Gen. caſe governed of *ignarus*, which ſignifieth ignorance. *Fidens animi*, bold of heart; *Animi* is the Genitive caſe governed of *Fidens*, which ſignifies courage. *Dubius mentis*, Doubtful of mind: *Mentis* is the Genitive caſe governed of *Dubius*, which ſignifies fear. *Memor præteriti*, Mindful of that that is paſt: *Præteriti* is the Gen. caſe governed of *memor*, which ſignifieth remembrance. *Reus furti*, Accuſed of theft; *Furti* is the Gen. caſe governed of *reus*, which ſignifieth accuſing.

Q. *What other Adjectives govern a Genitive caſe?*

*A.* Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of number.

Q. *Which Nouns are Partitives?*

*A. Aliquis* ſome body, *uter* whether, *neuter* neither, *nemo* no body, *nullus* none, *ſolus* alone, *unus* one, *medius* the middleſt, *quiſque* every one, *quicunque* whoſoever, *quidam* one, and *quis* for *aliquis* one.

Q. *What Noun is an Interrogative?*

*A. Quis* who.

Q. *Which are Nouns of Number?*

*A. Unus* one, *duo* two, *tres* three, *primus* the firſt, *ſecundus* the ſecond, *tertius* the third, *&c.*

Q. *Give an example of a Noun Partitive with a Genitive caſe.*

*A. Aliquis* ſome one, *noſtrum* of us.

*Noſtrum* is the Genitive caſe governed of *aliquis* a Partitive.

Q. *Give an example of a Noun of Number with a Genitive caſe.*

*A. Primus omnium*, The firſt of all.

*Omnium* is the Gen. caſe govern'd of *primus* a Noun of number.

Q. *When a queſtion is asked, how muſt the Anſwer be made in Latin?*

*A.* The anſwer muſt be made in Latin by the ſame caſe of a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, and by the ſame tenſe of a Verb, that the queſtion is asked by.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Cujus eſt fundus? Vicini:* Whoſe ground is it? A neighbours.

The Noun *Vicini* that anſwereth to the queſtion, is of the Genitive, becauſe *cujus* that asketh the queſtion is of the Genitive. *Quid agitur in ludo literario? ſtudetur*: What do boys in the School? They ply their Books. The Verb *ſtudetur* is of the preſent tenſe, becauſe the Verb *agitur*, by which the queſtion is asked, is of the preſent tenſe.

Q. *But when is the anſwer not made by the ſame caſe or tenſe that the Queſtion is asked by?*

*A.* 1. When a queſtion is asked by *Cujus, cuja, cujum*; as, *Cuja eſt Sententia? Ciceronis*: Whoſe Saying is this? *Cicero's.*

*Cuja* is the Nominative caſe, and *Ciceronis* the Genitive, becauſe the queſtion is made by *Cujus, cuja, cujum*, not by *cujus* the Genitive caſe of *Qui*. 2. When a queſtion is made by a word that may govern divers caſes; as, *Quanti emiſti librum? Parvo.* For how much bought you the Book? For little. *Emiſti* a Verb of buying, will govern the Genitive caſe *quanti*, and the Ablative caſe *parvo*, by ſeveral Rules. 3. When one muſt anſwer by one of theſe Poſſeſſives, *Meus* mine, *tuus* thine, *ſuus* his, *noſter* ours, *veſter* yours; as, *Cujus eſt domus? non veſtra, ſed noſtra*: Whoſe houſe is it; not yours, but ours. *Cujus* that asketh the queſtion is the Genitive caſe of *qui*, and governed of the Subſtantive *domus*; but *noſtra* and *veſtra* are the Nominative caſe, ſingular number, and Feminine gender, agreeing with their Subſtantive *Domus*.

Q. *What*

Q. *What caſe do Nouns of the Comparative and Superlative degree govern?*

*A.* Nouns of the Comparative and Superlative degree, being put partitively, that is to ſay, having after them this Engliſh *of* or *among*, require a Genitive caſe.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Aurium mollior eſt ſiniſtra*, Of the ears, the left is the ſofter.

*Aurium* is the Genitive caſe governed of *mollior*, which is of the Comparative degree. *Cicero Oratorum eloquentiſſimus*, *Cicero* the moſt eloquent of Orators. *Oratorum* is the Genitive caſe governed of *eloquentiſſimus*, which is of the Superlative degree, and put partitively, as *mollior* alſo is.

Q. *If Nouns of the Comparative degree have* than *or* by *after them, what caſe do they cauſe the word following to be?*

*A.* Nouns of the Comparative degree, having *than* or *by* after them, do cauſe the word following to be the Ablative caſe; as, *Frigidior glacie*, More cold than ice.

*Frigidior* of the Comparative degree, makes *glacie* than ice, to be of the Ablative caſe. *Doctior multo*, Better learned by a great deal. *Multo*, by a great deal, is the Ablative caſe governed of the Noun of the Comparative degree *Doctior*. *Uno pede altior*, Higher by one foot, *uno pede* by one foot, is the Ablative caſe governed of the Noun of the Comparative degree.

## The Dative Caſe.

Q. WHat *Adjectives require a Dative Caſe?*

*A.* Adjectives that betoken profit or diſprofit, likeneſs or unlikeneſs, pleaſure, ſubmitting, or belonging to any thing.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Labor eſt utilis corpori,* Labour is profitable to the body.

*Corpori* is the Dative caſe governed of *utilis*, ſignifying profit. *Æqualis Hectori*, Equal to *Hector*. *Hectori* is the Dative caſe governed of *æqualis*, ſignifying likeneſs. *Idoneus bello*, Fit for War. *Bello* is the Dative caſe governed of *idoneus*, ſignifying aptneſs. *Jucundus omnibus*, Pleaſant to all perſons. *Omnibus* is the Dative caſe governed of *jucundus*, ſignifying pleaſure. *Parenti ſupplex* Suppliant to his father. *Parenti* is the Dative caſe governed of *ſupplex*, ſignifying ſubmitting. *Mihi proprium*, Proper to me. *Mihi* is the Dative caſe governed of *proprium*, which ſignifieth belonging to a thing.

Queſt. *What other Adjectives govern a Dative caſe?*

*A.* Adjectives of the paſſive ſignification in *bilis*, and Participles in *dus*.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Flebilis flendus omnibus*, To be lamented of all men. *Omnibus* is the Dative caſe governed of the Adjective *flebilis*, that ends in *bilis*, or of *flendus*, which is a Noun Participle in *dus*, *Formidabilis*, *formidandus hoſti*, To be feared of his enemy. *Hoſti* is the Dative caſe governed of the Adjective *formidabilis*, which

which ends in *bilis*, or of *formidandus*, which is a Participle in *dus*.

*What do you mean by a Noun Participle?*

*A.* A Noun which is derived of a Participle, or a Participle turned into a Noun.

---

## The Accusative Case.

Q. *What Adjectives govern an Accusative case?*

*A.* Some Adjectives of quantity; as, *longus* long, *latus* broad, *altus* deep, (or high) *crassus* thick: for the word signifying the measure of length, breadth, or thickness of any thing, is put after Adjectives in the Accusative, and (sometime) in the Ablative case.

Q. *Give some examples.*

*A. Turris alta centum pedes*, A Tower a hundred foot high.

*Centum pedes* are the words signifying the measure of height, and are put after the Adjective *alta* in the Accusative case. *Arbor lata tres digitos*, A tree three fingers broad. *Tres digitos* are the words signifying the measure of breadth, and are put into the Accusative case after *lata*. *Liber crassus tres pollices, vel tribus pollicibus:* A Book three inches thick. *Tres pollices* are the words that signifie the measure of thickness, and are put after the Adjective *crassus* in the Accusative case, and may be put also in the Ablative case, *tribus pollicibus*.

## The Ablative Caſe.

Q. *What Adjectives require an Ablative and ſometimes a Genitive?*

A. Adjectives ſignifying fulneſs, emptineſs, plenty, or wanting.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

A. *Copiis abundans*, Abounding in wealth.

*Copiis* is the Ablative caſe governed of the Adjective (or rather of the Participle) *abundans*. *Crura thymo plena*, Thighs laden with Thyme; (or rather *crura thymo plenæ*, Bees having their Thighs laden with Thyme.) *Thymo* is the Ablative caſe governed of *plena*, which ſignifieth fulneſs.

*Vacuus ira, iræ, ab ira*, Void of anger. *Vacuus* governs the Genitive caſe *iræ*, or the Ablative *ira*, or *ab ira*, with a Prepoſition.

*Nulla epiſtola inanis re aliqua*, No Letter not containing ſome matter. *Re aliqua* is the Ablative caſe governed of *inanis*, which ſignifieth emptineſs.

*Ditiſſimus agri*, Very wealthy in land. *Agri* is the Genitive caſe governed of *ditiſſimus*, which ſignifieth plenty.

*Stultorum plena ſunt omnia*, All places are full of Fools. *Stultorum* is the Genitive caſe governed of *plena*, which ſignifies fulneſs.

*Quis niſi mentis inops oblatum reſpuat aurum?* Who but a fool would refuſe money when it is offered him? *Mentis* is the Genitive caſe governed of *inops*, which ſignifieth emptineſs.

*Integer vitæ ſceleriſque purus, non eget Mauri jaculis nec arcu:* He that is upright in life, and clear from Villany, doth not need the Moors Dart nor Bow. *Vitæ* is the Genitive caſe governed of *integer*, and *ſceleris*

*ſceleris* is the Genitive caſe governed of *purus*, becauſe theſe Adjectives ſignifie emptineſs.

*Expers omnium*, Void of all things. *Omnium* is the Genitive caſe governed of *expers*, which ſignifieth emptineſs.

*Corpus inane animæ*, A Body without a Soul. *Animæ* is the Genitive caſe governed of *inane*, which ſignifieth emptineſs.

Q. *What other Adjectives govern an Ablative caſe?*

*A.* Theſe Adjectives, *dignus* worthy, *indignus* unworthy, *præditus* endued, *captus* deprived, *contentus* content, with ſuch others.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Dignus honore*, Worthy of Honour. *Captus oculis*, Deprived of eyes. *Virtute præditus*, Endued with vertue. *Paucis contentus*, Content with a few things.

Q. *Which of theſe may have an Infinitive mood of a Verb inſtead of their Ablative caſe?*

*A. Dignus, indignus*, and *contentus.*

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Dignus laudari*, Worthy to be praiſed. *Contentus in pace vivere*, Content to live in peace.

---

## Conſtruction of the Pronouns.

Q. *When are theſe Genitive Caſes of the Primitives*, mei, tui, ſui, noſtri, *and* veſtri, *to be uſed?*

A. When ſuffering or paſſion is ſignified; as, *Pars tui*, Part of thee. *Amor mei*, The love of me.

Q. *But when are* meus, tuus, ſuus, noſter *and* veſter, *to be uſed?*

*A.* When Poſſeſſion is ſignified; as, *Ars tua*, Thy Skill. *Imago tua*, Thy Image.

Q. *When*

Q. *When are theſe Genitive caſes* noſtrum *and* veſtrum *to be uſed?*

*A.* After Diſtributives, Partitives, Comparatives, and Superlatives; as, *Nemo veſtrum*, None of you; *Aliquis noſtrum*, Some of us: *Major veſtrum*, The bigger of you: *Maximus natu noſtrum*, The eldeſt of us.

---

## Conſtruction of the Verb: and firſt with the Nominative Caſe.

Q. *WHat Verbs will have ſuch caſe after them as they have before them?*

*A. Sum* I am, *forem* I might be, *fio* I am made, *exiſto* I am in being, and certain Verbs Paſſives; as, *Dicor* I am ſaid, *vocor* I am called, *ſalutor* I am ſaluted, *appellor* I am called, *habeor* I am accounted, *exiſtimor* I am eſteemed, *videor* I ſeem, with other like.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Fama eſt malum*, Fame is an evil thing.

Malum *is the Nominative caſe after* eſt, *as* fama *is before it.* Malus cultura fit bonus, *An evil perſon by due ordering (or governance) is made good.* Bonus *is the Nominative caſe after* fit, *as* malus *is before it.* Cræſus vocatur dives, Cræſus *is called rich.* Dives *is the Nominative caſe after* vocatur, *as* Cræſus *is before it.* Horatius ſalutatur Poeta, Horace *is ſaluted by the name of Poet.* Poeta *is the Nominative caſe after* ſalutatur, *as* Horatius *is before it.* Malo te divitem eſſe quàm haberi, I had rather thou were rich indeed than ſo accounted. Divitem *is the Accuſative caſe after* eſſe, *as* te *is before it.*

Q. *What*

Q. *What other Verbs may have after them a Nominative caſe of the Noun or Participle, declaring the manner or circumſtance of the doing or ſuffering, as they have a Nominative caſe of the doer or ſufferer?*

*A.* Verbs that betoken bodily moving, going, reſting, or doing, which be properly called Verbs of geſture; as *eo* I go, *incedo* I go, *curro* I run, *ſedeo* I ſit, *bibo* I drink, *cubo* I lie down, *ſtudeo* I ſtudy, *dormio* I ſleep, *ſomnio* I dream.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Incedo claudus* I go lame.

*Claudus* is the Noun declaring the manner how I go. *Petrus dormit ſecurus*, *Peter* ſleepeth void of care. *Securus* is the Noun declaring how *Peter* ſleepeth. *Tu cubas ſupinus*, Thou lieſt with thy face upwards. *Supinus* is the Noun declaring the manner how thou lieſt. *Somnias vigilans*, Thou dreameſt waking. *Vigilans* is a Participle declaring the manner how thou dreameſt. *Studeto ſtans*, Study thou ſtanding. *Stans* is the Participle declaring how thou muſt ſtudy.

Q. *May not theſe Verbs have before them and after them an Accuſative caſe?*

*A.* Yes, ſometimes; as, *Non decet quenquam meiere currentem, aut mandentem*, It doth not become any man to piſs running, or eating: *Currentem* is a Participle declaring the circumſtance or manner of doing, and agrees with *quenquam*, which ſignifies the doer; and therefore is put in the ſame caſe with it.

Q. *When ſhall the word that goeth before the Verb, and the word that cometh after it, be put both in one Caſe, whether the Verb be tranſitive or intranſitive, of what kind ſoever the Verb be?*

*A.* Generally when the word that goeth before the Verb, and the word that cometh after the Verb, belong both to one thing; that is to say, have reſpect either to other, or depend either of other.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Loquor frequens*, I ſpeak often.

*Ego* and *frequens* belong both to one thing. *Taceo multus*, I hold my peace much. *Ego* and *multus* belong both to one thing. *Scribo Epiſtolas rariſſimus*, I write Letters very ſeldom. *Ego* and *rariſſimus* belong both to one thing. *Ne aſſueſcas bibere vinum jejunus*, Accuſtom not thy ſelf to drink wine next thine heart, or not having eaten ſomewhat before. *Tu* and *jejunus* belong both to one thing, and therefore they are put both in one caſe, as the others alſo before-mentioned.

---

## The Genitive Caſe.

Q. *When doth this Verb* Sum, *I am, cauſe the Noun, Pronoun, or Participle following, to be put in the Genitive caſe?*

A. When it betokeneth or importeth poſſeſſion, owing, or otherwiſe pertaining to a thing, as a token, property, duty, or guiſe.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Hæc veſtis eſt Patris*, This garment is my Fathers.

*Patris* is the Genitive caſe governed of *eſt*, becauſe it ſignifieth owing. *Inſipientis eſt dicere non putaram*, It is the property of a Fool to ſay, I had not thought. *Inſipientis* is the Genitive caſe governed of *eſt*, becauſe it ſignifies a property. *Extrema eſt dementiæ diſcere dediſcenda*, It is a point of the greateſt folly

folly in the world, to learn things that muſt afterwards be unlearned. *Extremæ dementiæ* is the Genitive caſe governed of *eſt*, becauſe it ſignifieth a property. *Orantis eſt nihil niſi cœleſtia cogitare*, It is the duty of one that is ſaying his prayers, to have mind on nothing but heavenly things. *Orantis* is the Genitive caſe governed of *eſt*, becauſe it ſignifieth a Duty.

Q. *But what Pronouns ſhall in ſuch manner of ſpeaking be uſed in the Nominative caſe?*

A. *Meus* mine, *tuus* thine, *ſuus* his, *noſter* ours, and *veſter* yours.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

A. *Hic codex eſt meus*, This Book is mine.

*Meus* is the Nominative caſe, and agreeth with *codex*, *Hæc domus eſt veſtra*, This houſe is yours. *Veſtra* agreeth with *domus*. *Non eſt mentiri meum*, It is not my guiſe (or property) to lye. *Meum* agreeth with *officium* underſtood. *Noſtrum eſt injuriam non inferre*, It is our parts not to do wrong. *Noſtrum* agreeth with *officium* underſtood. *Tuum eſt omnia juxta pati*, It is thy part (or duty) to ſuffer all things alike. *Tuum* agreeth with *officium* underſtood.

Q. *What caſe do Verbs govern that betoken to eſteem or regard?*

A. Verbs that betoken to eſteem or regard, require a Genitive caſe betokening value.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. *Parvi ducitur probitas*; Honeſty is reckoned little worth. *Parvi* is the Genitive caſe of the value, governed of *ducitur* which ſignifies to eſteem. *Maximi penditur nobilitas*, Nobleneſs of Birth is very much regarded. *Maximi* is the Genitive caſe of the value, governed of *penditur*, which ſignifieth to regard.

Queſt. *What caſe do Verbs of accuſing, condemning, warn-*

*warning, quitting, or aſſoyling, govern?*

*A.* They will have a Genitive caſe of the crime, or of the cauſe, or of the thing that one is accuſed, condemned, or warned of; or elſe an Ablative moſt commonly without a Prepoſition.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A Hic furti ſe alligat, vel furto:* This fellow chargeth himſelf with Theft.

*Furti* is the Genitive caſe of the crime that one is accuſed of, governed of *alligat.* which is a Verb of accuſing, and may be made by the Ablative caſe *furto.*

*Admonuit me errati, vel errato,* He adviſed me of a miſtake. *Errati* is the Genitive caſe of the thing that one is adviſed of, governed of *admonuit,* which is a Verb of warning, and may be made alſo by the Ablative caſe *errato.*

*De pecuniis repetundis damnatus eſt,* He was condemned of money unlawfully taken.

*Pecuniis repetundis* is the Ablative caſe of the crime that one is condemned of, and is governed of the Verb *damnatus eſt,* with the Prepoſition *de* before it.

Q. *What caſe do* ſatago *to have enough to do,* miſereor *to be merciful, and* miſereſco *to take pity, require?*

*A. Satago, miſereor,* and *miſereſco,* require a Genitive caſe.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Rerum ſuarum ſatagit,* He hath enough to do of his own matters.

*Rerum* is the Genitive caſe governed of *ſatagit. Miſerere mei Deus,* God be merciful unto me. *Mei* is the Genitive caſe governed of *miſerere.*

Q. *What caſe will* Reminiſcor *to remember,* obliviſcor *to forget,* recordor *to call to mind, and* memini *to remember, have?*

*A. Remi-*

*A. Reminiſcor, obliviſcor, recordor,* and *memini,* will have a Genitive or an Accuſative caſe.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Reminiſcor hiſtoriæ,* I remember the Hiſtory. *Hiſtoriæ* is the Genitive caſe governed of *reminiſcor. Obliviſcor carminis,* I forget the ſong. *Carminis* is the Genitive caſe governed of *obliviſcor. Recordor pueritiam,* I call to mind my Childhood. *Pueritiam* is the Accuſative caſe governed of *recordor. Obliviſcor lectionem,* I forget my leſſon. *Lectionem* is the Accuſative caſe governed of *obliviſcor. Memini tui, vel te,* I remember thee. *Tui* is the Genitive caſe governed of *memini,* and it may be made by the Accuſative caſe *te.*

*Memini de te,* I make mention of thee. *Memini* governs an Ablative caſe with a Preposition, but in another ſenſe.

*Egeo,* or *indigeo tui, vel te,* I have need of thee. *Tui* is the Genitive caſe governed of *egeo* or *indigeo,* which may be made by the Ablative caſe *te.* (But this example belongs properly to the rule of Verbs of plenty and ſcarceneſs which followeth.)

*Potior urbis,* I conquer the City; *potior voto,* I obtain my deſire. *Potior* governs a Genitive and an Ablative caſe, but in different ſignifications.

---

## The Dative Caſe.

Q. *What Verbs will have a Dative Caſe?*

*A.* All manner of Verbs put acquiſitively.

Q. *When are Verbs put acquiſitively?*

*A.* When they have theſe tokens *to* or *for* after them.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Non*

*A. Non Omnibus dormio*, I ſleep not to all men.

*Omnibus* is the Dative caſe governed of *dormio* being put acquiſitively. *Huic habeo, non tibi*, I have it for this man, and not for thee. *Huic* and *tibi* are Dative caſes governed of *habeo*, being put acquiſitively.

Q. *What Verbs do belong to this Rule?*

*A.* Thoſe that betoken profit or diſprofit; as, *Commodo* to do a pleaſure, *incommodo* to do a diſpleaſure; *noceo* to hurt. To compare; as, *compare* to compare, *compono* to compare, *confero* to compare. To give, or reſtore; *dono* to beſtow, *reddo* to reſtore, *refero* to reſtore. To promiſe or to pay; as, *promitto* to promiſe, *polliceor* to aſſure, *ſolvo* to pay. To command or ſhew; *Impero* to command, *indico* to declare, *monſtro* to ſhew. To truſt; as, *Fido* to truſt, *confido* to put truſt in, *fidem habeo* to be ſure. To obey, or to be againſt; as, *Obedio* to obey, *adulor* to flatter, *repugno* to reſiſt. To threaten, or to be angry with; as, *Minor* to threaten, *indignor* to chaſe, *iraſcor* to be angry.

Q. *What other Verbs will have a Dative caſe?*

*A. Sum* with its compounds, except *Poſſum*. Alſo Verbs compouuded with *ſatis*, *bene*, and *male*; as *ſatisfacio* to ſatisfie, *benefacio* to do well, *malefacio* to do ill. And finally, certain Verbs compounded with theſe Prepoſitions. *Præ* before, *ad* to, *con* together, *ſub* under, *ante* before, *poſt* after, *ob* for, *in* in, and *inter* between; as, *præluceo* to ſhine before, *adjicio* to add to, *condono* to pardon, *ſuboleo* to ſavour a little, *anteſto* to ſtand before, *poſtbabeo* to put back, *objicio* to object, *inſulto* to inſult, and *interſero* to put between.

Q. *What if this Verb* Sum, es, fui, *be ſet for* habeo *I have?*

*A.* Then

A. Then the word that ſeemeth in the Engliſh to be the Nominative caſe, ſhall be put in the Dative; and the word that ſeemeth to be the Accuſative caſe, ſhall be the Nominative.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

A. *Eſt mihi mater*, I have a mother.

*Eſt* there is put for *habeo* I have, *mihi* to me, for *ego* I, and *mater* a mother, for *matrem*; and ſo we ſay, *Eſt mihi mater*, for *Ego habeo matrem.*

*Non eſt mihi argentum*, I have no money. *Eſt* there is put for *habeo*; *mihi* to me, for *ego* I; and *argentum* money, in the Nominative, for *argentum* in the Accuſative caſe; and then we ſay, *Non eſt mihi argentum*, for *ego non habeo argentum*, I have no money.

Q. *But what if* Sum *be the Infinitive Mood?*

A. Then this Nominative caſe ſhall be turned into the Accuſative; as, *Scio tibi non eſſe argentum*, I know thou haſt no money.

Where *argentum* is the Accuſative caſe coming before the Infinitive mood *eſſe*, which ſhould have followed the Verb *habere*, had it been made thus in Latin, *Scio te non habere argentum*, I know that thou haſt no money, or I know thee not to have money.

Q. *What if* Sum *have after it a Nominative caſe and a Dative?*

A. Then the word that is the Nominative caſe, may be alſo the Dative; ſo that *Sum* may in ſuch manner of ſpeaking be conſtrued with a double Dative caſe.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. *Sum tibi præſidio*, I am to thee a ſafeguard.

*Præſidio* which might have been the Nominative caſe, is turned into the Dative, becauſe *tibi* is the Dative; ſo that *Sum* hath two Dative caſes, *tibi* and *præſidio*. *Hæc res eſt mihi voluptati*, This thing is to me a

pleaſure: *Voluptati* is the Dative caſe (which might have been the Nominat.) becauſe *mihi* is the Dat. caſe after *eſt*.

Q. *Hath on'y* Sum *a double Dative Caſe in ſuch manner of ſpeaking*?

*A.* No, for many other Verbs may in ſuch manner of ſpeaking have a double Dative caſe; one of the *Perſon*, and another of the thing.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Do tibi veſtem pignori*, I give thee my Garment for a pawn.

*Tibi* is the Dative caſe of the Perſon, and *pignori* of the thing, both governed of *do*.

*Verto hoc tibi vitio*, I impute this for a fault to thee. *Verto* governs the Dat. caſe *tibi*, which is of the perſon, and *vitio* which is of the thing.

*Hoc tu tibi laudi ducis*, Thou accounteſt this a commendation for thee. *Tibi* is the Dat. caſe of the perſon, and *laudi* of the thing, both governed of *ducis*.

---

## The Accuſative Caſe.

Q. WHat *Verbs are tranſitives*?

*A.* All ſuch as have after them an Accuſat. caſe of the doer or ſufferer, whether they be Active, Commune, or Deponent.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. uſus promptos facit*: Uſe makes men ready.

*Promptos* is the Accuſat. caſe after the Verb active *facit*. *Fœminæ ludificantur viros*, Women befool men. *Viros* is the Accuſat. caſe after the Verb deponent *ludificantur*. *Largitur pecuniam*, He beſtoweth money. *Pecuniam* is the Accuſat. caſe following the Verb Commune *largitur*.

Q. May

Q. *May Verbs Neuters alſo have an Accuſative caſe?*

*A.* Yes, Verbs Neuters may have an Accuſative caſe of their own ſignification.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Endymionis ſomnum dormis*; Thou ſleepeſt *Endymion*'s ſleep.

*Dormis* will have the Accuſative caſe *ſomnum* after it.

*Gaudeo gaudium*, I joy a joy. *Gaudium* followeth *gaudeo*. *Vivo vitam*, I live a life. *Vitam* followeth *vivo*, becauſe it is of its own ſignification.

Q. *What Verbs will have two Accuſative caſes after them, one of the ſufferer, and another of the thing?*

*A.* Verbs of asking, teaching, and arraying.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Rogo te pecuniam*, I ask thee money.

*Te* the Accuſative caſe of the ſufferer, and *pecuniam* of the thing, follow *rogo* a Verb of asking. *Doceo te literas*, I teach thee letters. *Te* the Accuſative caſe of the ſufferer, and *literas* of the thing, follow *doceo* a Verb of teaching. *Quod te jamdudum hortor*, Which I have exhorted thee to a good while. *Te* is the Accuſative caſe of the Sufferer, and *quod* of the thing; both which follow *hortor* a Verb of teaching. *Exuo me gladium*, I put my Sword off me. *Me* the Accuſative caſe of the ſufferer, and *gladium* of the thing, do both follow *exuo* a Verb of arraying.

---

## The Ablative Caſe.

Qu. WHat *Ablative caſe do all Verbs require?*

*A.* All Verbs require an Ablative caſe of the Inſtrument (put with this ſign *with* before it)

it) or of the cauſe, or of the manner of doing.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Ferit eum gladio*, He ſtriketh him with a Sword.

*Gladio* is the Ablative caſe of the Inſtrument, and governed of *ferit*. *Taceo metu*, I hold my Tongue for fear. *Metu* is the Ablative caſe of the cauſe, governed of *taceo*. *Summa eloquentia cauſam egit*, He pleaded with ſingular eloquence. *Summa eloquentia* is the Ablative caſe of the manner of doing, governed of *egit*.

Queſt. *In what caſe is the word of price put after Verbs?*

*A.* The word of price is put after Verbs in the Ablative caſe.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Vendidi auro* I ſold this for Gold.

*Auro* is the word of price put after *vendidi* in the Ablative caſe.

*Emptus ſum argento*, I am bought for money.

*Argento* is the word of price, put after *emptus ſum*, in the Ablative caſe.

Q. *What Genitive caſes are excepted, when they be put alone without Subſtantives?*

*A. Tanti* for ſo much, *quanti* for how much, *pluris* for more, *minoris* for leſs, *tantivis* for ſo much if you will, *tantidem* for juſt ſo much, *quantilibet* for as much as you pleaſe, *quanticunque* for how much ſoever.

Q *Give an example.*

*A. Quanti mercatus es hunc equum?* for how much bought you this horſe? *Certe pluris quam vellem*, Truly for more than I would.

*Quanti* is the Genitive caſe governed of *mercatus es*, and *pluris* is the Genitive caſe governed of *mercatus ſum* underſtood, becauſe they are put without Subſtantives.

Q. *What Adverbs may we always uſe after Verbs*

of

of price instead of their Casuals?

A. *Carius* dearer, *vilius* cheaper, *melius* better, and *pejus* worse.

Q. *What case will Verbs of plenty or scarceness, filling, emptying, loading, and unloading, have?*

A. An Ablative case.

Q. *Give some examples.*

A. *Affluis opibus*, Thou aboundest in wealth.

*Opibus* is the Ablative case governed of *affluis*, which signifieth plenty. *Expleo te fabulis*, I fill thee with tales. *Fabulis* is the Ablative case governed of *expleo*, which signifieth filling. *Spoliavit me bonis omnibus*, He plundered me of all my Goods. *Bonis* is the Ablative case governed of *spoliavit*, which signifieth emptying. *Oneras stomachum cibo*, Thou overchargest thy stomach with meat. *Cibo* is the Ablative case governed of *oneras*, which signifieth loading. *Levabo te hoc onere*, I will ease thee of this burden. *Onere* is the Ablative case governed of *levabo*, which signifieth unloading.

Quest. *What other Verbs will have an Ablative case?*

A. *Utor* to use, *fungor* to exercise a duty, *fruor* to enjoy, *potior* to obtain, *lætor* to be glad, *gaudeo* to rejoyce, *dignor* to vouchsafe, *muto* to change, *munero* to reward, *communico* to communicate, *afficio* to affect, *prosequor* to pursue, *impertio* to make partaker, *impertior* to be made partaker.

Q. *What Verbs will have an Ablative case with* à, ab, e, ex, *or* de?

A. Verbs that betoken receiving, distance, or taking away.

Q. *Give some examples.*

A. *Accepit literas à Petro*, He received a Letter from *Peter*.

*Petro* is the Ablative case with the Preposition à go-

verned of *accepit* a Verb of receiving. *Audivi ex nuncio*, I heard by the Meſſenger. *Nuncio* is the Ablative caſe with the Prepoſition *ex*, governed of *audivi* a Verb of receiving.

*Longe diſtat à nobis*, He is far diſtant from us. *Nobis* is the Ablative caſe with the Prepoſition *à*, governed of *diſtat*.

*Eripui te è malis*, I delivered thee from evils. *Malis* is the Ablative caſe with the Prepoſition *è*, governed of *eripui*, a Verb of taking away.

Q. *When may this Ablative caſe be turned into a Dative?*

*A.* After Verbs of taking away; as, *Subtraxit mihi cingulum*, He ſnatcht my Girdle from me.

*Mihi* is the Dative caſe governed of *ſubtraxit*, a Verb of taking away. *Eripuit illi vitam*, He took his life violently from him. *Illi* is the Dative caſe governed of *eripuit*, a Verb of taking away.

Q. *What Ablative caſes may Verbs of comparing or exceeding have?*

*A.* An Ablative caſe of the word that ſignifieth the meaſure of exceeding.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Præfero hunc multis gradibus*, I prefer this man by many degrees.

*Gradibus* is the word that ſignifieth the meaſure of exceeding, and is govern'd of *Præfero*, a Verb of comparing.

*Paulo intervallo illum ſuperat*, He is beyond the other but a little ſpace. *Intervallo* the word ſignifying the meaſure of exceeding, is the Ablative caſe governed of *præfero* a Verb of comparing.

Q. *What is the Rule of the Ablative caſe abſolute?*

*A.* A Noun or a Pronoun Subſtantive joyned with a Participle expreſſed or underſtood, and having none

none other word whereof it may be governed, ſhall be put in the Ablat. caſe abſolute.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. *Rege veniente, hoſtes fugerunt*, The King coming, the Enemies fled.

The Noun Subſtantive *Rege* joyned with the Participle *veniente*, having no word whereon it could be governed, is put in the Ablat. caſe abſolute.

Me *duce vinces*, I being Captain thou ſhalt overcome. *Me* a Pronoun Subſtantive joyned with the Participle *exiſtente* underſtood, and having no other word whereon to be governed, is put in the Ablative caſe abſolute.

Q. *How may the Ablative Caſe abſolute be reſolved?*

A. By any of theſe words, *dum* whilſt, *cum* when, *quando* when, *ſi* if, *quanquam* although, *poſtquam* after that.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. *Rege veniente*, The King coming, *id eſt*, that is, *dum veniret Rex*, whilſt the King came. *Me duce*, I being Captain, *id eſt*, that is, *Si ego dux fuero*, If I ſhall be Captain.

---

## Conſtructions of Paſſives.

Qu. *WHat Caſe will a Verb Paſsive have after him?*

A. A Verb Paſſive will have after him an Ablat caſe with a Prepoſition, and ſometimes a Dat.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

A. *Virgilius legitur à me*, *Virgil* is read of me. *Me* is the Ablat. caſe with the Prepoſition *à*, which is governed of *legitur*, a Verb Paſſive.

*Tibi fama petatur*, Let fame be ſought for by thee. *Tibi* is the Dative caſe, governed of *petatur* a Verb paſſive.

Q. *When ſhall the ſame Ablative or Dative caſe be the Nominative caſe to the Verb?*

*A.* When the Engliſh is made into Latin by the Verb active.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Ego lego Virgilium*, I read *Virgil*; *à me* of me, is turned into *ego* I. *Petas tu famam*, Thou mayeſt ſeek for fame. *Tibi* the Dative caſe, is here turned into the Nominative *tu*.

---

## Gerunds.

Q. *What Caſe will Gerunds and Supines have?*

*A.* Gerunds and Supines will have ſuch caſe as the Verbs that they come of.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Otium ſcribendi literas*, Leiſure of writing letters. *Literas* is the Accuſative caſe, governed of the Gerund *di*, *ſcribendi*, becauſe the Verb *ſcribo*, that it comes of, will have an Accuſative caſe.

*Ad conſulendum tibi*, To provide for thee. *Tibi* is the Dative caſe, governed of the Gerund *conſulendum*, becauſe the Verb *conſulo* will have a Dative caſe.

*Auditum Poetas*, to hear Poets. *Poetas* is the Accuſat. caſe governed of the Supine *auditum*, becauſe the Verb *audio* governs an Accuſative caſe.

Q. *When ſhall the Engliſh of the Infinitive Mood be made by the Gerund in* di?

*A.* After any of theſe Nouns Subſtantives, *Studium* a deſire, *cauſa* a reaſon, *tempus* time, *gratia* the cauſe, *otium* leiſure, *occaſio* an occaſion, *libido* deſire,

deſire, *ſpes* hope, *opportunitas* opportunity, *voluntas* will, *modus* manner, *ratio* reaſon, *geſtus* geſture, *ſatietas* fulneſs, *poteſtas* power, *licentia* licenſe, *conſuetudo* cuſtom, *conſilium* purpoſe, *vis* power, *norma* a Rule, *amor* the love, *cupido* deſire, *locus* opportunity, and other like, if the Verb ſhould be of the Active Voice.

Q. *After what elſe is the Gerund in* di *uſed* ?

*A.* After certain Adjectives; as, *Cupidus viſendi*, Deſirous of ſeeing. *Certus eundi*, Reſolved to go. *Peritus jaculandi*, Skilful in darting. *Gnarus bellandi*, Expert in feats of Arms.

Q. *When one hath the Engliſh of the Participle of the Preſent tenſe with this ſign* of *or* with *coming after a Noun Adjective, how ſhall it be put in making Latin* ?

*A.* In the Gerund in *do* ; as, *Defeſſus ſum ambulando*, I am weary with walking. With walking is made in Latin by the Gerund in *do*, *ambulando*.

Q. *When elſe ſhall the Participle of the preſent tenſe in Latin making, be put in the Gerund in* do ?

*A.* When it cometh without a Subſtantive with this ſign *in* or *by* before him.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Cæſar dando, ſublevando, ignoſcendo, gloriam adeptus eſt : Cæſar* got glory by giving, by ſuccouring, and by pardoning.

The Participles giving, ſuccouring, and pardoning, having *by* before them, are made in the Gerund in *do*. *In apparando totam hunc conſumunt diem*, They ſpend this whole day in getting ready. The Participle getting ready, having *in* before it, is made in Latin by the Gerund in *do*.

Q. *How may the ſame Gerund in* do *be uſed* ?

*A.* Either without a Prepoſition, or with one of theſe Prepoſitions, *à. ab, abs, de, è, ex, cum, in, pro.*

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Deter-*

*A. Deterrent à bibendo,* They deter or affright them from drinking.

*Bibendo* is uſed with the Prepoſition *à*. *Ab amando* from loving, *amando* is uſed with the Prepoſition *ab*. *Cogitat de edendo,* He thinketh of eating. *Edendo* is uſed with *de*.

*Ratio bene ſcribendi cum loquendo conjuncta eſt,* The manner of writing well is joyned with ſpeaking. *Loquendo* is uſed with *cum*.

Q. *When may the Engliſh of the Infinitive mood be put in the Gerund in* dum ?

*A.* When it cometh after a reaſon, and ſheweth the cauſe of a reaſon.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Dies mihi ut ſatis ſit ad agendum, vereor,* I fear that a whole day will not be enough for me to do my buſineſs.

To do my buſineſs, coming after the reaſon (or clauſe) I fear that a whole day will not be enough for me; and ſhewing the cauſe why I fear, is put in the Gerund in *dum*.

Q. *How elſe is the Gerund in* dum *uſed ?*

*A.* After one of theſe Prepoſitions, *ad* to, *ob* for, *propter* becauſe of, *inter* between, *ante* before.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Ad capiendum hoſtes,* To take the enemies. *Ob (vel propter) redimendum captivos,* For to redeem priſoners. *Inter cœnandum,* At ſupper while. *Ante damnandum,* Before they be condemned.

Q. *When one hath this Engliſh* muſt *or* ought *in a reaſon, where it ſeemeth to be made by this Verb* oportet, *how may it be put in Latin ?*

*A.* In the Gerund in *dum*, with this Verb *eſt* ſet impersonally; and then the word that ſeemeth in the Engliſh to be the Nom. caſe, ſhall be the Dat.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Abeun-*

*A. Abeundum eſt mihi*, I muſt go hence.

The Engliſh *muſt*, that (if it had been made by *oportet*) ſhould have been *oportet me*, I muſt, is made by the Gerund and the Verb *eſt*, *abeundum eſt*, I muſt go; and the word *I*, that ſeems in Engliſh to be the Nominative caſe, is made in Latin by the Dative caſe *mihi*.

---

## Supines.

Q. *What is the firſt Supine that hath the active ſignification put after?*

*A.* After Verbs and Participles that betoken moving to a place.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Eo cubitum*, I go to lie down.

*Cubitum* is the firſt Supine put after the Verb *eo*. *Spectatum admiſſi riſum teneatis amici?* Being ſuffered to ſee, friends, can you forbear laughing? *Spectatum* is the firſt Supine governed of the Participle *admiſſi*.

Q. *What is the latter Supine which hath the paſſive ſignification put after?*

*A.* After theſe Nouns Adjectives, *dignus* worthy, *indignus* unworthy, *turpis* filthy, *fœdus* ugly, *proclivis* prone, *facilis* eaſie, *odioſus* hateful, *mirabilis* wonderful, *optimus* the beſt, and ſuch like.

Q. *How may the ſame Supine alſo be turned?*

*A.* Into the Infinitive Mood paſſive; as it may indifferently be ſaid in Latin, *Facile factu*, or *facile fieri*, Eaſie to be done. *Factu* being the latter Supine, and *fieri* the Infinitive paſſive, either of which may be put after the Adjective *facile*.

*Turpe dictu*, or *turpe dici*, unhoneſt to be ſpoken. *Dictu* is the latter Supine, and *dici* is the Infinitive paſſive put after *turpe*.

The

## The Time.

Qu. IN *what caſe be Nouns put, that betoken Time?*

*A.* Nouns that betoken part of time, be commonly put in the Ablative caſe; as, *Nocte vigilas*, Thou watcheſt in the night.

*Nocte* is put in the Ablative caſe, becauſe it ſignifieth in the night, which is part of time.

*Luce dormis*, Thou ſleepeſt in the day. *Luce* is put in the Ablative caſe, becauſe it ſignifieth part of time in the day.

Q. *But how are Nouns uſed that betoken continual term of time without ceaſing or intermiſſion?*

*A.* In the Accuſative caſe; as, *Sexaginta annos natus*, Threeſcore years old. *Sexaginta annos* is the Accuſative caſe, becauſe it ſignifieth a continuance of time, threeſcore years.

*Hyemem totam ſtertis*, Thou ſnorteſt all Winter. *Hyemem totam* is the Accuſative caſe, becauſe it ſignifieth a continual term of time, all Winter.

## Space of Place.

Qu. IN *what caſe be Nouns put that betoken ſpace between place and place?*

*A.* Commonly in the Accuſative caſe; as, *Pedem hinc ne diſceſſeris*, Go not thou a foot from this place.

*Pedem* is the Noun put in the Accuſative caſe, becauſe it ſignifieth the ſpace of a foot.

## A Place.

Q. *How are Nouns Appellatives (i. e. Common names) or names of great places put?*

*A.* Nouns appellatives, or names of great places, be put with a Preposition, if they follow a Verb that signifieth in a place, to a place, from a place, or by a place.

Q. *Give some examples.*

*A. Vivo in Anglia,* I live in *England.*

*Anglia* is the proper name of a great place or Country with the Preposition *in* put after *vivo,* the Verb that signifieth in a place. *Veni per Galliam in Italiam,* I came by *France* into *Italy. Galliam* is the proper name of a great place, with the Preposition *per* put after the Verb *veni,* which signifieth by a place; and *Italiam* is the proper name of a great place, with the Preposition *in,* which is put after *veni,* signifying to a place.

*Proficiscor ex urbe,* I go a journey out of the City. *urbe* is a Noun appellative put with the Preposition *ex,* after the Verb *proficiscor,* which signifieth from a place.

Q. *How shall a Noun signifying* in a place, *or* at a place, *be put, if the place be a proper name of the first or second declension and singular number?*

*A.* It shall be put in the Genitive case; as, *Vixit Londini,* He lived at *London.*

*Londini* is a Noun proper, signifying at a place, of the second Declension, and singular number, and therefore it is put in the Genitive case.

*Studuit Oxoniæ,* He studied at *Oxford. Oxoniæ* is a Noun proper of the first Declension, and singular number,

ſignifying at a place, and is therefore put in the Genitive caſe.

Q. *What Nouns Appellatives (or common) are thus uſed in the Genitive caſe?*

*A.* Theſe Nouns, *Humi* on the ground, *domi* at home, *militiæ* in warfare, *belli* in war.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Procumbit humi bos*: The Ox lieth on the ground.

*Humi* is of the ſecond Declenſion and ſingular number, and put in the Genitive caſe, as if it were a proper name.

*Militiæ enutritus eſt*: He was brought up in warfare. *Militiæ* is of the firſt Declenſion and ſingular number, and put in the Genitive caſe like a proper name. *Domi bellique otioſi vivitis*, Ye live idly at home and in war, *Domi* and *belli* are both of the ſecond Declenſion and ſingular number, and are put in the Genitive caſe, as if they were proper names.

Q. *But what if the proper name of the place be of the third Declenſion, or of the Plural number?*

*A.* Then ſhall it be put in the Dative or in the Ablative caſe.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Militavit Carthagini*, or *Carthagine*, he was a Souldier at *Carthage*.

*Carthagini* is of the third Declenſion and ſingular number, and is therefore put in the Dative caſe, and may alſo be put in the Ablative *Carthagine*.

*Athenis natus eſt*, He was born at *Athens*.

*Athenis* is of the firſt Declenſion and of the Plural number, and is therefore put in the Dative or Ablative caſe.

Q. *What common name of place may be likewiſe uſed in the Dative or Ablative caſe?*

*A. Rus*, The Country; as, *Ruri* or *Rure educatus eſt*, He

He was brought up in the Country.

Q. *How ſhall the proper name of a place be put, if it ſignifie to a place?*

*A.* It ſhall be put in the Accuſative caſe without a Preposition; as, *Eo Romam*, I go to *Rome*.

*Romam* ſignifieth to a place, and is therefore put without a Preposition in the Accuſative caſe.

Q. *What common names of place may be likewiſe uſed in the Accuſative caſe?*

*A. Domus* and *Rus*; as, *Confero me domum*, I betake my ſelf home. *Recipio me Rus*, I go back again into the Country.

Q. *How ſhall the proper name of a place be put, if it ſignifie from a place, or by a place?*

*A.* It ſhall be put in the Ablat. caſe without a Preposition; as, *Diſceſſit Londino*, He went from *London*. *Profectus eſt Londino* (*vel per Londinum*) *Cantabrigiam*, He went by *London* to *Cambridge*.

Q. *What common names be likewiſe put in the Ablative caſe, without a Preposition?*

*A. Domus* and *Rus*: as, *Abiit domo*, He went from home; *Rure reverſus eſt*, He is returned out of the Country.

---

## Impersonals.

Q. *How may one know a Verb Impersonal?*

*A.* A Verb Impersonal hath no Nominative caſe before it, and this word *it* or *there*, is commonly its ſign.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Decet*, it becometh; *Oportet aliquem eſſe*, There muſt be ſome body.

Q. *But*

Q. *But what if the Verb Impersonal have neither of these words before it?*

*A.* Then the word that seemeth to be the Nominative case, shall be such case as the Verb Impersonal will have after it.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Me oportet*, I must.

*Me*, that seemeth as if it should be the Nominative *ego*, is the Accusative case: because the Verb *oportet* will have such a case after it. *Tibi licet*, Thou mayest: *Tibi*, which seemeth as if it should be the Nominative case, is made by the Dative case, because the Verb impersonal *licet* will have a Dative case?

Q. *What Impersonals require a Genitive case?*

*A Interest* it concerneth, *refert* it mattereth, and *est* for *interest* it concerneth, require a Genitive case of all casual words, excepted *mea*, *tua*, *sua*, *nostra*, *vestra*, and *cuja*, the Ablative cases of Pronouns Possessives.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Interest omnium recte agere*, It concerneth all men to do rightly.

*Omnium* is the Genitive case governed of *Interest.*

*Tua refert teipsum nosse*, It concerneth thee to know thy self. *Tua* is the Ablative case of the Pronoun Possessive *tuus* put after *refert.*

Q. *What Impersonals require a Dative case?*

*A. Libet* it listeth, *licet* it is lawful, *patet* it is manifest, *liquet* it is clear, *constat* it is manifest, *placet* it pleaseth, *expedit* it is expedient, *prodest* it profiteth, *sufficit* it sufficeth, *vacat* it is at leisure, *accidit* it befalleth, *convenit* it agreeth, *contingit* it happeneth, and other like.

Q. *What Impersonals will have an Accusative case only?*

A. *Delectat* it delighteth, *decet* it becometh, *juvat* it helpeth, *oportet* it behoveth.

Q. *What*

Q. *What Impersonals will have also a Genitive case beside the Accusative?*

*A. Pœnitet* it repenteth, *tædet* it irketh, *pudet* it ashameth, *miseret* it pitieth, *misereſcit* it beginneth to pity; as, *Noſtri noſmet pœnitet*, It repenteth us of our selves.

*Noſtri* is the Genitive case plural, and *noſmet* the Accusative case after *pœnitet*. *Me civitatis tædet*, It irketh me of the City. *Civitatis* is the Genitive, and *me* is the Accusative case after *tædet*. *Pudet me negligentiæ*, I am ashamed of my negligence; *Me* is the Accusative case, and *negligentiæ* is the Genitive case after *pudet*. *Miseret me tui*, I pity thee. *Me* is the Accusative case, and *tui* the Genitive after *miseret*. *Me illorum misereſcit*, I begin to pity them. Me is the Accusative, and *illorum* the Genitive after *misereſcit*.

Q. *What case do Verbs Impersonals of the Passive voice, being formed of Neuters, govern?*

*A.* They govern such cases as the Verbs Neuters which they come of.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Parcatur ſumptui*, Let cost be spared.

*Sumptui* is the Dative case governed of the Verb Impersonal *parcatur*: because we say, *Parcamus pecuniæ*, Let us spare cost, making the Verb Neuter *parcamus*, to govern the Dative case *pecuniæ*.

Q. *What will a Verb Impersonal of the passive voice have?*

*A.* Like case as other Verbs Passives have; as, *Benefit multis à Principe*, It is done well to many by the Prince.

The Impersonal Passive *Benefit* hath an Ablative case with a Preposition after him, because Personal Passives have so.

Q. *But is the Ablative case with a Preposition always expreſſed after Impersonal Paſsives?*

*A.* No, many times the caſe is not expreſſed, but underſtood; as, *Maxima vi certatur*, It is fought with very great force, (*ſubaudi* underſtand) *ab illis* of them.

Q. *When a deed is ſignified to be done of many, the Verb being a Verb Neuter, how may we change it?*

*A.* We may all change the Verb Neuter into the Impersonal in *tur*; as, *In ignem poſita eſt, fletur.* She is put into the fire, it is wept (of them) or they weep.

The Verb *flent* being a Neuter, is changed into the Impersonal *fletur*; becauſe a deed is ſignified to be done of many, for many wept.

---

## A Participle.

Q. *What Caſe do Participles govern?*

*A.* Participles govern ſuch caſes as the Verbs that they come of.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*Fruiturus amicis*, Like to enjoy his friends.

*Fruiturus* governs the Ablative caſe *amicis*, becauſe the Verb *fruor*, that it comes of, will have an Ablative caſe. *Conſulens tibi*, conſulting for thee. *Tibi* is the Dative caſe governed of the Participle *conſulens*, becauſe the Verb *conſulo* will have a Dative caſe. *Diligendus ab omnibus*, To be beloved of all men. *Omnibus* is the Ablative caſe with a Prepoſition after *diligendus*, becauſe the Verb Paſſive *diligor*, that it cometh of, will have an Ablative caſe with a Prepoſition.

Q. *How many ways may Participles be changed into Nouns?*

*A.* Four manner of ways.

Q. *Which is the firſt?*

*A.* When

*A.* When the voice of a Participle is conſtrued with another caſe than the Verb that it cometh of.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Appetens vini,* Greedy of Wine.

The word *appetens* governs a Genitive caſe, whereas the Verb *appeto* governs an Accuſative, and therefore the Participle is turned into a Noun.

Q. *Which is the ſecond?*

*A.* When it is compounded with a Prepoſition which the Verb that it cometh of cannot be compounded withal.

Q. *Give an example.*

*A. Indoctus* untaught.

*Indoctus* is compounded with the Prepoſition *in*, which the Verb *doceo* is never compounded withal, and therefore it is a Noun, not a Participle; *Innocens* innocent. *Innocens* is alſo compounded with the Prepoſition *in*, which the Verb *noceo* is not compounded withal.

Q. *Which is the third?*

*A.* When it formeth all the degrees of compariſon.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Amans* loving, *amantior* more loving, *amantiſſimus* very loving; *Doctus* learned, *doctior* more learned, *doctiſſimus* moſt learned.

Q. *What is the fourth?*

*A.* When it hath no reſpect, nor expreſſed difference of time.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Homo laudatus,* A man laudable. *Puer amandus id eſt, amari dignus,* A child worthy to be loved.

Q. *How are all theſe properly called?*

*A.* Nouns Participles.

Q. *What Caſes do Participles govern when they are changed into Nouns?*

*A.* The Genitive caſe; as, *Fugitans litium,* avoiding

ing of ſuits. *Indoctus pilæ*, Unskilful at Ball. *Cupientiſſimus tui*, Very deſirous of thee. *Lactis abundans*, abounding in milk.

Q. *What ſignification have theſe Participial voices* peroſus, exoſus, *and* pertæſus, *when they govern an Accuſative caſe?*

*A.* Always the Active; as, *Exoſus ſævitiam*, Hating cruelty. *Vitam pertæſus*, Weary of Life.

---

## The Adverb.

Q. *WHat Adverbs require a Genitive Caſe?*

*A.* Adverbs of quantity, time, and place.

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*A. Multùm lucri*, Much gain.

*Multum* is an Adverb of quantity, which governs the Genitive caſe *lucri*. *Tunc temporis*, At that time. *Tunc* is an Adverb of time, and governs the Genitive caſe *temporis*. *ubique Gentium*, In every Country. *Gentium* is the Genitive caſe plural governed of *ubique*, every where, which is an Adverb of place.

Q. *What Adverbs will have a Dative caſe?*

*A.* Certain that come of Nouns which have a Dative caſe.

Q. *Give an example or two.*

*A. Venit obviam illi*, He came to meet him.

*Illi* is the Dative caſe governed of *obviam*, becauſe *obvius* the Noun Adjective will have a Dative caſe.

*Canit ſimiliter huic*, He ſings like this man.

*Huic* is the Dative caſe governed of the Adverb *ſimiliter*, becauſe the Adjective *ſimilis*, of which it comes, will have a Dative.

Q. *What Dative caſes are uſed adverbially?*

*A. Tem-*

*A. Tempori* in time, *luci* by day, *veſperi* in the evening; as, *Tempori ſurgendum*, We muſt riſe in due time, *Veſperi cubandum*, We muſt go to bed in the evening, *Luci laborandum*, We muſt labour by day.

*Q. What Adverbs will have an Accuſative caſe?*

*A.* Certain Adverbs, which come of Prepoſitions, which have an Accuſative caſe.

*Q. Give an example or two.*

*A. Propiùs urbem*, Nearer the City.

*Propiùs* will have an Accuſative caſe, becauſe *prope* the Prepoſition hath ſuch a caſe.

*Proximè caſtra*, Next to the tents.

*Caſtra* is the Accuſative caſe governed of *proximè*, becauſe *prope* the Prepoſition that it comes of, will have an Accuſative caſe.

*Q. When are Prepoſitions changed into Adverbs?*

*A.* When they be ſet without a caſe, or elſe do form the degrees of Compariſon.

---

## The Conjunction.

Qu. *WHat Conjunctions couple like caſes?*

*A.* Conjunctions Copulatives and Diſjunctives, and theſe four, *quàm*, *niſi*, *præterquam*, *an*; as, *Xenophon & Plato fuere æquales*, *Xenophon* and *Plato* were equals.

The Conjunction Copulative *Et*, couples the two Nominative caſes, *Xenophon* and *Plato*.

*Q. But are they never put between divers caſes?*

*A.* Yes ſometimes; as, *Studui Romæ & Athenis*, I ſtudied at *Rome* and at *Athens*.

*Et* couples between *Romæ* of the Genitive and

*Athenis* of the Ablative caſe. *Eſt liber meus, & fratris,* It is mine and my Brothers Book. *Et* couples between *meus* of the Nominative, and *fratris* of the Genitive caſe. *Emi fundum centum nummis & pluris,* I bought Land for an hundred pounds and more. *Et* couples between *nummis* of the Ablative, and *pluris* of the Genitive caſe.

Q. *What Conjunctions commonly joyn like Moods and Tenſes together?*

*A.* Copulatives and Disjunctives; as, *Petrus & Johannes precabantur, & docebant*; *Peter* and *John* did pray, and teach.

The Conjunction Copulative (*&*) couples *precabantur* and *docebant* together, which are both of the Indicative mood and preterimperfect tenſe.

Q. *But do they not couple divers Tenſes?*

*A.* Yes, ſometimes; as, *Et habetur, & referetur tibi à me gratia.* I both do thank you, and will thank you.

*Habetur* the preſent tenſe, and *referetur* the Future tenſe, are coupled together by *Et.*

---

## The Prepoſition.

Qu. *WHat Prepoſition is ſometimes not expreſſed but underſtood?*

*A.* This Prepoſition *in*: nevertheleſs the eaſual word is put in the Ablative caſe; as, *Habeo te loco parentis,* I have thee in ſtead of a Father or Mother; that is *in loco* in ſtead.

Queſt. *What caſe doth a Verb Compound require ſometimes?*

*A.* A Verb Compound requireth the caſe of the Prepoſition that he is compounded withal.

Q. *Give*

Q. *Give ſome examples.*

*Exeo domo*, I go out of the houſe.

*Domo* is the Ablative caſe governed of the Preposition *ex*, that *exeo* is compounded withal. *Praereo te inſalutatum*, I paſs by thee unſaluted. *Te* is the Accuſative caſe governed of the Preposition *Praeter*, which *Praereo* is compounded withal. *Adeo templum*, I go to the Church.

*Templum* is the Accuſative caſe governed of the Preposition *ad* wherewith *adeo* is compounded.

---

## The Interjection.

Q. *WHat caſe do Interjections require?*

*A.* Certain Interjections require a Nominative caſe; certain, a Dative; certain, an Accuſative; and certain, a Vocative.

Q. *Give an example of an Interjection that requires a Nominative caſe.*

*A. O feſtus dies hominis!* O the jovial day of a man!

*Dies* is the Nominative caſe governed of the Interjection *O*.

Q. *Give an example of an Interjection that requires a Dative caſe.*

*A. Hei mihi*, Wo is me.

*Mihi* is the Dative caſe governed of *hei*.

Q. *Give an example of an Interjection that requires an Accuſative.*

*A. Heu ſtirpem inviſam!* O the hated ſtock!

*Stirpem* is the Accuſative caſe governed of *heu*.

Q. *Give an example of an Interjection governing the Vocative caſe.*

*A. Pro ſancte Jupiter!* O holy *Jupiter*!

*Jupiter* is the Vocative caſe governed of *Proh.*

Q. *what other caſe will* proh *have?*

A. The ſame *proh* will have an Accuſative caſe; as, *Proh Deum atque hominum fidem,* O the faith of the gods and of men.

*Fidem* is the Accuſative caſe governed of *Proh.*

THE

THE

# EXAMPLES

OF THE

# English-Rules

GRAMMATICALLY

CONSTRUED,

And the first words, especially of the Nouns and Verbs, set down in the Margent, referring to the INDEX how to Decline them.

Very necessary for all such, as would throughly Teach, or Learn that Second Part of the

*COMMON ACCIDENCE.*

The

# EXAMPLES

OF

# English-Rules

## RAMMATICALLY

## CONSTRUED,

and the first words, especially of the Nouns and Verbs, [illegible] to the [illegible] Deck [illegible].

Very necessary for all Each, as would throughly Teach, or Train that Second Part of the

COMMON ACCIDENCE.

# THE EXAMPLES OF THE ENGLISH-RULES Grammatically Conſtrued.

## The Firſt Concord.

2 A *Mas tu* ? Loveſt thou ?
*Rex* doth the King b *venit* come *ne* or no ?
2 *Ama tu*, love thou.
*Ille* let him a *amato* love.
h *Eſt* it is *meus liber* my Book.
h *Venit* there came *quidam* one *ad* to c *me* me.
*Si* if d *cupis* thou deſireſt e *placere* to pleaſe f *magiſtro* the maſter, g *utere* uſe thou *diligentia* diligence, *nec* neither h *ſis* be thou *tantus ceſſator* ſo great a ſluggard, *ut* as that i *indigeas* thou mayeſt need k *calcaribus* ſpurs.
*Præceptor* the maſter l *legit* readeth, *vero* but m *vos* ye n *negligitis* neglect.
*Ego* I *&* and *tu* thou n *ſumus* are o *in tuto* in ſafeguard.

a *Amo*
b *Venio*
c *Ego*
d *Cupio*
e *Placeo*
f *Magiſter*
g *Utor*
h *Sum*
i *Indigeo*
k *Calcar*
l *Lego*
m *Tu*
n *Negligo*
o *Tutus*

Tu

p *Poriclitor*

*Tu* thou, & and, *pater* (thy) father, p *periclitamini* are in jeopardy.

q *Accerſo*
r *Ira*
ſ *Amor*
t *Quis*
u *Votum*
x *Percutio*
y *Pectus*
z *Fio*
a *Robur*
b *Surgo*
c *Diluculo*
d *Sum*
e *Saluber*
f *Scio*
g *Jucundus*

*Pater* (the) Father, & and, *Præceptor* (thy) Maſter, q *accerſunt* ſend for, m *te* thee. r *Iræ* the falling out, *amantium* of lovers, h *eſt* is, *redintegratio* the renewing, ſ *amoris* of love. *Enim* for, t *quid* what, *niſi* but, u *vota* prayers, h *ſuperſunt* remain?

x *Percuſſit* (ſhe) ſtroke, y *pectora* (her) breaſts, *quoque* and alſo, y *pectus* (her) breaſts, z *fiunt* became, a *robora* oak.

b *Surgere* to riſe, c *diluculo* betimes in the morning, d *eſt* is, e *ſaluberrimum* a very wholſom thing.

f *Scire* to know, *multum* much, d *eſt* is, g *jucundiſſima vita* a moſt pleaſant life.

---

## The Second Concord.

h *Cernor*
i *Incertus*
* *Res*

CErtus *amicus* a ſure friend, h *cernitur* is tried, *in* i *incerta* * *re* in a doubtful matter.

*Homo* a man, *armatus* armed. *Ager* a field, *colendus* to be tilled. *Hic vir* this man, d *eſt* is, *meus herus* my Maſter.

k *Beatus*

*Rex* the King, & and, *Regina* the Queen, (d *ſunt* are) k *beati* bleſſed.

---

## The Third Concord.

l *Sapio*
m *Loquor*
n *Paucus*
o *Venio*
p *Tempus*
q *Qui*
r *Primus*
ſ *Omnis*

VIr the man, l *ſapit* is wiſe, *qui* which, m *loquitur* ſpeaketh, n *pauca* few (words.)

o *Veni* I came, in p *tempore* in time, q *quod* which, d *eſt* is, r *primum* the chiefeſt, ſ *omnium* * *rerum* of all things.

*Tu*

*Tu* thou, t *dormis* ſleepeſt, *multum* much, & and, u *potas* drinkeſt, *ſæpe* often, *ambo* q *quæ* both which (things) d *ſunt* are, x *inimica* hurtful, y *corpori* to the body.

*Gaudeo* I am glad, *quod* that, *tu* thou, *bene* z *vales* art in good health. *Gaudeo* I am glad, a *te* that thou, *bene* z *valere* art in good health.

*Jubeo* I bid, *ut* that, *tu* thou, b *abeas* go hence.

*Jubeo* I bid, a *te* that thou, b *abire* go hence.

c *Habuit* he had, d *equum* a horſe, & and, e *mulam* a mule, f *quos* which, g *vendidit* he ſold.

*Imperium* the rule, & and, *dignitas* the dignity, f *quæ* which, h *petiiſti* thou haſt required.

*Arcus* the bow, & and, i *calami* the arrows, k *ſunt* are, l *bona* good. *Arcus* the bow, & and, i *calami* the arrows, f *quæ* which, m *fregiſti* thou haſt broken.

t *Dormio*
u *Poto*
x *Inimicus*
y *Corpus*
z *Valeo*
a *Tu*
b *Abeo*
c *Habeo*
d *Equus*
e *Mula*
f *Qui*
g *Vendo*
h *Peto*
i *Calamus*
k *Sum*
l *Bonus*
m *Frango*

---

## The Caſe of the Relative.

n *Admiror*
o *Nummus*
p *Alienus*
q *Periculum*
r *Facio*
f *Cautus*
t *Nolo*
u *Amo*
x *Divitiæ*
y *Sordidus*
z *Omnis*
a *Ego*
b *Sum*
c *Qualis*
d *Video*
e *Qui*
f *Volo*
g *Ago*
h *Gratia*

EST (he) is, *miſer* wretched, *qui* who, n *admiratur* admireth, o *nummos* money.

*Felix* (he is) happy, f *quem* whom, p *aliena* q *pericula* other mens harms, r *faciunt* do make, ſ *cautum* wary.

t *Noli* do not thou, u *amare* love, x *divitias* riches f *quod* which, k *eſt* is, y *ſordidiſſimum* the baſeſt, z *omnium* of all (things.)

*Hei* wo, a *mihi* to me, *qualis* what one, b *erat* was he? b *Erat* he was, *talis* ſuch a one, c *qualem* as, *nunquam* d *vidi*, I never ſaw.

e *Quibus* to whom, f *voluiſti* (thou) wouldeſt, a *me* that I, g *agere* ſhould give, b *gratias* thanks, g *egi* I have given (thanks.)

e *Quibus*

c *Quibus* i *rebus* with what things *adductus* being moved k *feciſti* haſt thou done (it?)

c *Quæ* which things *nunc* now *non* b *eſt* there is not *locus* time l *narrandi* to tell.

m *Vides* thou ſeeſt *in* c *quem* n *locum* unto what paſs *res* the matter b *ſit* is o *deducta* brought.

p *Senties* thou ſhalt perceive *qui vir* what a fellow b *ſim* I am.

c *Quarum* i *rerum* of which things q *utram* whether *velim* I deſire *minus* leſs *non poſſum* I cannot *facilè* eaſily r *exiſtimare* eſteem.

*Ego* I *non* ſ *novi* knew not t *illum* him c *cujus cauſa* for whoſe ſake u *incipis* thou beginneſt x *hoc* this (matter.)

y *Omnia* all things z *dabuntur* ſhall be given * *tibi* thee a *quibus* of which b *habes* thou haſt *opus* need.

a *Cui* whom *utrum* whether c *procedam* I ſhould go *obviam* to meet *nondum* d *ſtatui* (I) have not yet determined.

e *Utere* uſe f *virtute* virtue, a *qua* than which *nihil* nothing g *eſt* is b *melius* better.

*Quantus* how great a man g *erat* was *Julius Cæſar*, a *quo* i *Imperatore* who being General, k *Romani* the Romans *primum* firſt l *ingreſſi ſunt* entered into *Britanniam* Britain.

m *Habuit* (he) had *ferrum* a knife a *quo* with which n *occideret* he would have ſlain o *ſe* himſelf.

*Avis* the bird a *quæ* which p *appellatur* is called *Paſſer* a Sparrow; or, *avis* the bird *qui* which p *appellatur* is called *Paſſer* a Sparrow.

g *Eſtne* is not * *ea* that *Lutetia*, a *quam* which *nos* we q *dicimus* do call r *Pariſios* Paris? g *Eſtne* is not * *ea* that *Lutetia*, a *quos* which *nos* we q *dicimus* do call r *Pariſios* Paris?

i *Res*
k *Facio*

l *Narro*
m *Video*
n *Locus*
o *Deductus*
p *Sentio*

q *Uter*

r *Exiſtimo*
ſ *Noſco*
t *Ille*
u *Incipio*
x *Hic*
y *Omnis*
z *Do*
* *Tu*
a *Qui*
b *Habeo*
c *Procedo*
d *Statuo*
e *Utor*
f *Virtus*
g *Sum*
h *Bonus*
i *Imperator*
k *Romanus*
l *Ingredior*
m *Habeo*
n *Occido*
o *Sui*
p *Appellor*

* *Is*
q *Dico*
r *Pariſii*

Conſtruction

## Conſtruction of Noun Subſtantives.

F*Acundia* the eloquence ſ *Ciceronis* of *Cicero*. *Opus* the work t *Virgilii* of *Virgil*. *Amator* a Lover u *ſtudiorum* of ſtudies. *Dogma* the opinion x *Platonis* of *Plato*.

y *Multa* many things z *impediverunt* have letted a *me* me. b *Pauca* a few things c *ſimilia* like d *his* to theſe e *nonnulla* ſome things *hujuſmodi* of this ſort.

f *Multum* g *lucri* much gain. h *Quantum* i *negotii* how much buſineſs? k *Id* l *operis* that work.

*Puer* a Boy m *bonâ* n *indole* of a good towardneſs; or, *Puer* a Boy m *bonæ* n *indolis* of a good towardneſs; *Puer* a child m *bono* o *ingenio* of a good wit.

*Opus eſt* p *mihi* I have need q *tuo* r *judicio* of thy judgment. *Uſus* ſ *eſt* t *filio* my Son hath need *viginti* u *minis* of twenty pounds.

ſ *Cicero*
t *Virgilius*
u *Studium*
x *Plato*
y *Multus*
z *Impedio*
a *Ego*
b *Paucus*
c *Similis*
d *Hic*
e *Nonnullus*
f *Multum*
g *Lucrum*
h *Quantus*
i *Negotium*
k *Is.*
l *Opus*
m *Bonus*
n *Indoles*
o *Ingenium.* p *Ego.* q *Tuus.* r *Judicium.* ſ *Sum.* t *Filius*
u *Minæ.*

## Conſtruction of Adjectives.

### *The Genitive Caſe.*

C*upidus* covetous x *auri* of gold. *Peritus* expert y *belli* of war. *Ignarus* ignorant z *omnium* of all things. *Fidens* bold a *animi* of courage. *Dubius* doubtful b *mentis* of mind. *Memor* mindful c *præteriti* of that which is paſt, *Reus* accuſed d *furti* of theft.

*Aliquis* ſome one e *noſtrum* of us. *Primus* the firſt f *omnium* of all.

g *Cujus fundus* whoſe ground h *eſt* is it? i *Vicini* a neighbours.

x *Aurum*
y *Bellum*
z *Omnis*
a *Animus*
b *Mens*
c *Præteritus*
d *Furtum*
e *Ego*
f *Omnis*
g *Quis*
h *Sum*
i *Vicinus.*

g *Quid*

k *Ago*
l *Ludus*
m *Literarius*
n *Cujus*
o *Cicero*
p *Quantus*
q *Emo*
r *Liber*
ſ *Parvus*
t *Quis*
u *Veſter*
x *Noſter*
y *Sinister*
z *Auris*
a *Eloquens*
b *Orator*
c *Frigidus*
d *Glacies*
e *Doctus*
f *Multus*
g *Altus*
h *Unus*
i *Pes*

g *Quid* k *agitur* what is done *in* l *ludo* m *literario* in the School? *ſtudetur* it is ſtudied; that is, the Boys ply their Books.

n *Cuja ſententia* whoſe ſaying, h *eſt* is it? o *Ciceronis* Cicero's. p *Quanti* for how much q *emiſti* haſt thou bought r *librum* the Book? ſ *Parvo* for a little.

t *Cujus* whoſe h *eſt* is *domus* the houſe? *Non* u *veſtra* not yours, *ſed* but x *noſtra* ours.

y *Siniſtra* the left h *eſt* is *mollior* the ſofter z *aurium* of the Ears.

*Cicero* (is) a *eloquentiſſimus* the eloquenteſt b *oratorum* of the Orators.

c *Frigidior* more cold d *glacie* than ice.

e *Doctior* better learned f *multo* by much.

g *Altior* higher h *uno pede* by one foot.

---

## The Dative Caſe.

k *Corpus*
l *Hector*
m *Bellum*
n *Omnis*
o *Parens*
p *Ego*

L*Abor* labour *eſt* is *utilis* profitable k *corpori* to the body. *Æqualis* equal i *Hectori* to *Hector*. *Idoneus* fit m *bello* for war. *Jucundus* pleaſant n *omnibus* to all perſons. *Supplex* ſuppliant o *parenti* to his parent.

*Proprium* proper p *mihi* to me.

*Flebilis* or *flendus* to be lamented n *omnibus* of all men.

q *Hoſtis*

*Formidabilis* or *formidandus* to be feared, q *hoſti* of his enemy.

---

## The Accuſative Caſe.

r *Altus*
ſ *Latus*
t *Digitus*

T*urris* a Tower r *alta* high *centum* ſ *pedes* an hundred foot. *Arbor* a Tree ſ *lata* broad *tres* t *digitos* three

three fingers. *Liber* a book, *craſſus* thick, *tres* u *pollices*, or x *tribus* u *pollicibus* three inches.

u *Pollex*
x *Tres*

## The Ablative Caſe.

A*Bundans* abounding, y *copiâ* in wealth, z *Crura* thighs a *plena* loaden, b *thymo* with thyme. *Vacuus* void, *irâ*, *iræ*, or *ab irâ*, of anger. *Nulla Epiſtola* no Letter, *inanis* void, c *aliquâ* d *re* of ſome matter. *Ditiſſimus* very rich, e *agri* in ground. f *Omnia* all places, g *ſunt* are, a *plena* full, h *ſtultorum* of fools. *Quis* who, *niſi* but, *inops* (one that is) empty, i *mentis* of underſtanding, k *reſpuat* would refuſe, *aurum* gold, l *oblatum* being offered? *Integer* (a man that is) upright, *vitæ* of life, *que* and, *pu us* clear from m *ſceleris* wickedneſs, *non* n *eget* needeth not, o *jaculis* the darts, *Mauri* of the Moor, *nec* nor, p *arcu* the bow. *Expers* void, f *omnium* of all things. *Corpus* a body, *inane* void of, *animæ* a ſoul.

*Dignus* worthy, q *honore* of honour. *Captus* deprived r *oculis* of eyes. *Præditus* endued, ſ *virtute* with vertue. *Contentus* content, t *paucis* with few things.

*Dignus* worthy, v *laudari* to be praiſed. *Contentus* content, x *vivere* to live, *in* y *pace* in peace.

y *Copia*
z *Crus*
a *Plenus*
b *Thymus*
c *Aliquis*
d *Res*
e *Ager*
f *Omnis*
g *Sum*
h *Stultus*
i *Mens*
k *Reſpuo*
l *Oblatus*
m *Sceleris*
n *Egeo*
o *Jaculum*
p *Arcus*
q *Honor*
r *Oculus*
ſ *Virtus*
t *Paucus*
u *Laudor*
x *Vivo*
y *Pax*

## Conſtruction of the Pronouns.

P*Ars* part, z *tui* of thee. *Amor* the love, a *mei* of me.
*Ars* b *tua* thy art. *Imago* b *tua* thy Image.

*Nemo* none, c *veſtrum* of you. *Aliquis* ſome one, *noſtrum* of us. d *Major* the bigger, *veſtrum* of you. d *Maximus* e *natu* the eldeſt, a *noſtrum* of us.

z *Tu*
a *Ego*
b *Tuus*
c *Tu*
d *Magnus*
e *Natu*

## Conſtruction of the Verb: and firſt with the Nominative Caſe.

*Sum*
*Malus*
*Fio*
*Vocor*
*Salutor*
*Tu*
*Dives*
*Habeor*
*Dormio*
*Cubo*
*Somnio*
*Studeo*
*Quiſquam*
*Meio*
*Currens*
*Mandens*

*Epiſtola*
*Aſſueſco*
*Bibo*

FAma fame, f *eſt* is, g *malum* an evil thing. *Malus* an evil perſon, *cultura* by due ordering, h *fit* is made, *bonus* good. *Cræſus* i *vocatur* is called, *dives* rich. *Horatius* Horace, k *ſalutatur* is ſaluted, *Poeta* Poet. *Malo* I had rather, *te* that thou, f *eſſe* wert, m *divitem* rich, *quàm* than, n *haberi* accounted. *Incedo* I go, *claudus* lame, *Petrus* Peter, o *dormit* ſleepeth *ſecurus* ſecure. *Tu* thou p *cubas* lieſt down, *ſupinus* having thy face upward. q *Somnias* thou dreameſt, *vigilans* waking. r *Studeto* ſtudy thou, *ſtans* ſtanding. *Non decet* it doth not become, ſ *quenquam* any man, t *meiere* to piſs, u *currentem* running, *aut* or, x *mandentem* eating. *Loquor* I ſpeak, *frequens* often.

*Taceo* I hold my tongue, *multus* much. *Scribo* I write, y *Epiſtolas* Letters, *variſſimus* very ſeldom. *Ne* z *aſſueſcas* accuſtom not (thy ſelf) a *bibere* to drink, *vinum* wine, *jejunus* faſting.

## The Genitive Caſe.

*Sum*
*Pater*
*Inſipiens*
*Dico*
*Puto*
*Extrema*
*Dementia*
*Diſco*
*Dediſcendus.*

HÆc *Veſtis* this garment, b *eſt* is, c *patris* my Fathers. b *Eſt* it is the property, d *Inſipientis* of a Fool, e *dicere* to ſay, *Non* f *putâram* I had not thought.

b *Eſt* it is the point, g *extremæ* h *dementiæ* of extream madneſs, i *diſcere* to learn, k *dediſcenda* (things that are) to

to be unlearned. b *Eſt* it is the duty, l *orantis* of one praying, m *cogitare* to think of, *nihil* nothing, *niſi* but, n *cæleſtia* heavenly things.

*Hic codex* this book, b *eſt* is, *meus* mine. *Hæc domus* this houſe, b *eſt* is, *veſtra* yours. *Non* b *eſt* it is not, *meum* my property, o *mentiri* to lye. b *Eſt* it is, p *noſtrum* our part, *non* q *inferre* not to offer, r *injuriam* wrong. b *Eſt* it is, ſ *tuum* thy duty, t *pati* to ſuffer, u *omnia* all things, *juxta* alike.

*Probitas* honeſty, x *ducitur* is reckoned, y *parvi* little worth, *Nobilitas* nobility, z *penditur* is eſteemed, a *maximi* very much worth *Hic* this man, b *alligat* chargeth c *ſe* himſelf, d *furti vel furto* of theft. e *Admonuit* he adviſed, *me* me, f *errati vel errato* of (my) miſtake. g *Damnatus eſt* he is condemned, *de* h *pecuniis* i *repetundis* of money unjuſtly taken.

k *Satagit* he hath enough to do, l *ſuarum* m *rerum* of his own buſineſs. *Deus* O GOD, n *miſerere* have mercy, o *mei* on me.

*Obliviſcor* I forget, p *carminis* the ſong.

*Recordor* I call to mind, q *pueritiam* my childhood; *Obliviſcor* I forget, r *lectionem* my leſſon. *Memini* I remember, ſ *tui vel te* thee. *Memini* I make mention, *de* ſ *te* of thee. *Egeo* or *Indigeo* I have need, ſ *tui vel te* of thee. *Potior* I conquer, t *urbis* the City; *potior* I obtain, u *voto* my deſire.

l *Orans*
m *Cogito*
n *Cæleſtis*
o *Mentior*
p *Noſter*
q *Infero*
r *Injuria*
ſ *Tuus*
t *Fatior*
u *Omnis*
x *Ducor*
y *Parvus*
z *Pendor*
a *Magnus*
b *Alligo*
c *Sui*
d *Furtum*
e *Admoneo*
f *Erratum*
g *Damnor*
h *Pecunia*
i *Repetundis*
k *Satago*
l *Suus*
m *Res*
n *Miſereor*
o *Ego*
p *Carmen*
q *Pueritia*
r *Lectio*
ſ *Tu*
t *Urbs*
u *Votum*

## The Dative Caſe.

N*On dormio* I ſleep not, x *omnibus* to all men. *Habeo* I have it, y *huic* for this man, *non* not, *tibi* for thee.

*Non* z *eſt mihi* I have not, *argentum* money; *Scio* I know, *non* z *eſſe* c *tibi* that thou haſt not, *argentum* money.

*Sum* I am, *præſidio* a ſafeguard, c *tibi* to thee. *Hæc res* this thing, z *eſt* is, *voluptati* a pleaſure, * *mihi* to me.

*Do* I give *veſtem* (my) garment, c *tibi* to thee, a *pignori* for a pawn. *Verto* I impute, *hoc* this, b *vitio* for a fault, c *tibi* to thee. *Tu* thou, d *ducis* judgeſt, *hoc* this e *laudi* a commendation, c *tibi* to thee.

x Omnis
y Hic
z Sum
* Ego
a Pignus
b Vitium
c Tu
d Duco
e Laus

## The Accuſative Caſe.

U*Sus* uſe, f *facit* makes (men) g *promptos* ready. *Fœminæ* women, h *ludificantur* do befool, i *viros* men. k *Largitur* he freely beſtoweth, l *pecuniam* money.

m *Dormis* thou ſleepeſt, n *ſomnum* the ſleep, o *Endymionis* of Endymion. *Gaudeo* I rejoyce, *gaudium* a joy.

*Vivo* I live, p *vitam* a life. *Rogo* I ask, c *te* thee, q *pecuniam* money. *Doceo* I teach, *te* thee, r *literas* letters. ſ *Quod* which, *hortor* I exhort, c *te* thee, *jamdudum* now a great while. *Exuo* I put off, t *gladium* my ſword, u *me* from me.

f Facio
g Promptus
h Ludificor
i Vir
k Largior
l Pecunia
m Dormio
n Somnus
o Endymion
p Vita
q Pecunia
r Litera
ſ Qui
t Gladius
u Ego

The

## The Ablative Caſe.

x *Ferit* he ſtriketh, y *eum* him, z *gladio* with a ſword: *Taceo* I hold my tongue, a *metu* for fear. b *Egit* he handled, c *cauſam* the cauſe, d *ſummâ eloquentiâ* with exceeding great eloquence.

e *Vendidi* I ſold (it) f *auro* for gold. g *Emptus ſum* I am bought, h *argento* for money. i *Quanti* for how much, k *mercatus es* haſt thou bought, l *hunc* m *equum* this horſe? *Certè* truly, n *pluris* for more, *quàm* than, o *vellem* I would.

p *Affluis* thou aboundeſt, q *opibus* in wealth.

r *Cares* thou wanteſt, ſ *virtute* vertue. *Expleo* I fill *te* thee, u *fabulis* with tales. x *Spoliavit* he plundered, y *me* me, *bonis* z *omnibus* of all my goods. a *Oneras* thou over-chargeſt, b *ſtomachum* (thy) ſtomach, c *cibo* with meat. d *Levabo* I will eaſe, e *te* thee, f *hoc* g *onere* of this burden.

h *Accepit* he received, i *literas* a Letter, k *Petro* from Peter. l *Audivi* I heard, *ex* m *nuncio* by the meſſenger. n *Diſtat* he is diſtant, *longè* a great way, o *nobis* from me. p *Eripui* I have delivered, e *te* thee, q *malis* from evils. r *Subtraxit* he plucked, ſ *cingulum* (my) girdle, o *mihi* from me. p *Eripuit* he took, t *vitam* his life, u *illi* from him.

*Præſero*, I prefer, f *hunc* this man, x *multis* y *gradibus* by many degrees.

z *Superat* he is beyond, u *illum* him, a *paulo* b *intervallo* a little ſpace.

x *Ferio*
y *Is*
z *Gladius*
a *Metus*
b *Ago*
c *Cauſa*
d *Supra*
e *Vendo*
f *Aurum*
g *Emo*
h *Argentum*
i *Quantus*
k *Mercor*
l *Hic*
m *Equus*
n *Plus*
o *Volo*
p *Affluo*
q *Opes*
r *Careo*
ſ *Virtus*
t *Tu*
u *Fabula*
x *Spolio*
y *Ego*
z *Omnis*
a *Onero*
b *Stomachus*
c *Cibus*
d *Levo*
e *Tu*
f *Hic*
g *Onus*
h *Accipio*

i *Litera* k *Petrus* l *Audio* m *Nuncius* n *Diſto* o *Ego* p *Eripio* q *Malus*
r *Subtraho* ſ *Cingulus* t *Vita* u *Ille* x *Multus* y *Gradus* z *Supero* a *Paulus*
b *Intervallum*

c *Rege* the King, d *veniente* coming, e *hoſtes* the enemies, f *fugerunt* fled. g *Me* h *duce* I being Captain, i *vinces* thou ſhalt overcome.

c *Rege* the King, d *veniente* coming, *id eſt*, that is, *dum* whileſt, *Rex* the King, *venirct* came. g *Me* h *duce* I being Captain, *id eſt*, that is, *ſi* if, *ego* I, k *fuero* ſhall be, *dux* Captain. i *Vinces* thou ſhalt overcome.

Rex
Venio
Hoſtis
Fugio
Ego
Dux
Vinco
Sum

## Conſtruction of Paſſives.

*Virgilius* Virgil, l *legitur* is read, *à me* of me. *Fama* let fame, m *petatur* be ſought for, *tibi* by thee. *Lego* I read, *Virgilium* Virgil. *Tu* thou, n *petas* mayeſt ſeek for, *famam* fame.

l Legor
m Petor
n Peto

## Gerunds.

*Otium* leaſure, o *ſcribendi* of writing, p *literas* letters. *Ad* q *conſulendum*, to conſult, r *tibi* for thee. ſ *Auditum* to hear, t *Poetas* Poets.

*Cupidus* deſirous, u *viſendi* to ſee. *Certus* reſolved, x *eundi* to go. *Peritus* skilful, y *jaculandi* of darting. *Gnarus* expert, z *bellandi* in making war.

*Sum* I am, *defeſſus* weary, a *ambulando* with walking. *Cæſar* b *adeptus eſt* hath got, c *gloriam* glory, d *dando* by giving, g *ſublevando* by relieving, f *ignoſcendo* by pardoning. g *Conſumunt* they ſpend, h *hunc* i *totum* k *diem* this whole day, *in* l *apparando* in getting ready.

m *Deterrent* they affright, à n *bibendo* from drinking, *ab* o *amando* from loving. p *Cogitat* he thinketh, *de*

o Scribo
p Literæ
q Conſulo,
r Tu
ſ Audio
t Poeta
u Viſo
x Ego
y Jaculor
z Bello
a Ambulo
b Adipiſcor
c Gloria
d Do
e Sublevo
f Ignoſco
g Conſumo
h Hic
i Totus
k Dies

l *Apparo* m *Deterreo*. n *Amo* p *Cogito*.

q *Edendo*

q *Edendo* of eating. *Ratio* the manner, r *ſcribendi* of writing, ſ *eſt* is, t *conjuncta* joyned, *cum* u *loquendo* with ſpeaking. *Vereor* I am afraid, *ut dies ſatis non* ſ *ſit*, that a day may not be enough, x *mihi* for me, *ad agendum* to do my buſineſs. *Ad* y *capiendum* to take, z *hoſtes* the enemies. *Ob* (*vel propter*) a *redimendum* to redeem, b *captivos* the priſoners. *Inter* c *cœnandum*, at ſupper-while. *Ante* d *damnandum*, before they be condemned. e *Ab eundum eſt* f *mihi*, I muſt go hence.

q *Edo*
r *Scribo*
ſ *Sum*
t *Conjunctus*
u *Loquor*
x *Ego*
y *Capio*
z *Hoſtis*
a *Redimo*
b *Captivus*
c *Cœno*
d *Damno*
e *Abeo*
f *Ego*

## Supines.

E*O* I go, g *cubitum* to lie down. h *Amici* friends, i *admiſſi* being admitted, *ſpectatum* to ſee, k *teneatis* can ye forbear, l *riſum* laughter?

m *Facile* eaſie, n *factu* to be done: m *Facile* eaſie, o *fieri* to be done. p *Turpe* diſhoneſt, q *dictu* to be ſpoken, *turpe* diſhoneſt, r *dici* to be ſpoken.

g *Cubo*
h *Amicus*
i *Admiſſus*
k *Teneo*
l *Riſus*
m *Facilis*
n *Facio*
o *Fio*
p *Turpis*
q *Dico*
r *Dicor*

## Time.

ſ *Vigilas* thou watcheſt, t *nocte* in the night. u *Dormis* thou ſleepeſt, x *luce* in the day. *Sexaginta* y *annos natus*, Threeſcore years old. z *Stertis* thou ſnorteſt, a *totam* b *hyemem* all the winter.

ſ *Vigilo*
t *Nox*
u *Dormis*
x *Lux*
y *Annus*
z *Sterto*
a *Totus*
b *Hyems*

## Space of Place.

NE c *diſceſſeris* depart thou not, d *pedem* a foot, *hinc* hence.

c *Diſcedo*
d *Pes*

## A Place.

*Venio*
*Gallia*
*Italia*
*Urbs*
*Vivo*
*Lendinum*
*Studeo*
*Oxonia*
*Procumbo*
*Humus*
*Enutrio*
*Militia*
*Otiosus*
*Domus*
*Bellum*
*Milito*
*Carthago*
*Nascor*
*Athenæ*
*Educor*
*Rus*
*Roma*
*Ego*
*Domus*
*Discedo*
*Londinum*
*Proficiscor*
*Cantabrigia*
*Abeo*
*Revertor*

*Vivo* I live, *in Anglia* in England. e *Veni* I came, *per Galliam* by France, *in* g *Italiam* into Italy. *Proficiscor* I goe a journey, *ex* h *urbe* out of the City.

i *Vixit* he lived, k *Londini* at London. l *Studuit* he studied, m *Oxoniæ* at Oxford.

*Bos* the Oxe, n *procumbit* lyeth, o *humi* on the ground. p *Enutritus est* he was brought up, q *militiæ* in warfare. *Vivitis* ye live, r *otiosi* idle, *domi* at home, *que* and, t *belli* in war.

u *Militavit* he was a ſouldier, x *Carthagini* or x *Carthagine* at Carthage. y *Natus est* he was born, z *Athenis* at Athens.

a *Educatus est* he was brought up, b *ruri* or b *rure* in the Countrey. *Eo* I go, c *Romam* to Rome. *Confero* I betake, d *me* my ſelf, e *domum* home. *Recipio me* I betake me again, *rus* into the Countrey. f *Discessit* he departed, g *Londino* from London. h *profectus est* he went a journey, g *Londino* (*vel per Londinum*) by London, i *Cantabrigiam* to Cambridge. k *Abiit* he went, *domo* from home. l *Reversus est* he is returned, b *rure* from the Countrey.

## Impersonals.

*Sum*
*Aliquis*
*Tu*
*Omnis*
*Ago*

*Oportet* there muſt, m *esse* be, n *aliquem* ſome body. *Oportet* d *me* I muſt. *Licet* o *tibi* thou mayeſt. *Interest* it concerneth, p *omnium* all men, q *agere* to deal *recte* rightly.

*Refert*

*Refert* it concerneth, r *tuâ* thee, ſ *noſſe* to have known t *teipſum* thy ſelf.

*Pœnitet* it repenteth, u *noſmet* us, *noſtrî* of our ſelves.

*Tædet* it irketh, d *me* me, x *Civitatis* of the City.

*Pudet* it aſhameth, d *me* me, y *negligentiæ* of my negligence. *Miſeret* it pitieth, *me* me, o *tui* for thee. *Miſereſcit* it begins to pity, d *me* me, a *illorum* of them.

b *Parcatur* c *ſumptui*, let coſt be ſpared; d *parcamus* let us ſpare, e *pecuniæ* money. *Beneſit* it is done well, f *multis* to many, a g *Principe* by the Prince.

*Certatur* (*ab illis*) they ſtrive, h *maximâ* i *vi* with a very great force.

k *Poſita* l *eſt* ſhe is put, *in* m *ignem* into the fire. *Fletur* they wept.

r *Tuus*
ſ *Noſco*
t *Tuipſe*
u *Egomet*
x *Civitas*
y *Negligentia*
a *Ille*
b *Parcor*
c *Sumptus*
d *Parco*
e *Pecunia*
f *Multus*
g *Princeps*
h *Magnus*
i *Vis*
k *Poſitus*
l *Sum*
m *Ignis*

---

## A Participle.

F*Ruiturus* like to enjoy, n *amicis* (his) friends. *Conſulens* conſulting, o *tibi* for thee. *Diligendus* to be beloved, *ab* p *omnibus* of all. *Appetens* greedy, q *vini* of wine.

*Indoctus* untaught, *Innocens* innocent.

*Amans* loving, *amantior* more loving, *amantiſſimus*, very loving.

*Homo* a man, *laudatus* laudable. *Puer* a boy, *amandus* (*id eſt*, that is) r *amari dignus* worthy to be loved.

*Fugitans* avoiding, ſ *litium* ſuits. *Indoctus* unskilful, t *pilæ* at ball. *Cupientiſſimus* moſt deſirous, o *tui* of thee. *Abundans* abounding, u *lactis* with milk.

*Exoſus* hating, x *ſævitiam* cruelty. *Pertæſus* weary of, y *vitam* life.

n *Amicus*
o *Tu*
p *Omnis*
q *Vinum*
r *Amor*
ſ *Lis*
t *Pila*
u *Lac*
x *Sevitia*
y *Vita*

The

## The Adverb.

z *Lucrum*
a *Tempus*
b *Gens*
* *Venio*
c *Ille*
d *Cano*
e *Hic*
f *Surgo*
g *Cubo*
h *Laboro*
i *Urbs*
k *Prope*

*Multùm* a *veneri* much gain. *Tunc* a *temporis* at that time. *ubique* g *gentium* every where.

* *Venit* he came, *obviam* to meet, c *illi* him, d *Canit* he ſingeth, *ſimiliter* like, e *huic* this man.

f *Surgendum* we muſt riſe, *temporì* in time. g *Cubandum* we muſt go to bed, *veſperì* in the evening. h *Laborandum* we muſt work, *luci* by day.

k *Propiùs* nearer, i *urbem* the City. k *Proximè* very near *caſtra* the tents.

## The Conjunction.

m *Sum*
n *Equalis*
o *Studeo*
p *Roma*
q *Athenæ*
r *Frater*
ſ *Emo*
t *Fundus*
u *Nummus*
x *Plus*
y *Precor*
z *Doceo*
a *Habeor*
b *Referor*
c *Tu*
d *Ego*

*Xenophon*, & and, *Plato* m *fuere* have been, n *equales* equals. o *Studui* I have ſtudied, p *Romæ* at Rome, & and, q *Athenis* at Athens. m *Eſt* it is, *meus liber* my book, & and, r *fratris* my brothers. ſ *Emi* I bought, t *fundum* a ground, *centum* u *nummis* for an hundred pieces, & and, x *pluris* more.

*Petrus* Peter, & and, *Johannes* John, y *precabantur* did pray, & and, z *docebant* did teach. *Gratia* thanks, & both, a *habetur* is given, & and, b *referetur* ſhall be given, c *tibi* to thee, & d *me* by me.

## The Preposition.

e *Locus*
f *Parens*
g *Domus*

*Habeo* I have c *te* thee, e *loco* (i.e. *in loco*) in ſtead, f *parentis* of a Parent. *Exeo* I go out of, g *domo* the

the houſe, *Prætereo* I paſs by, e *te* thee, h *inſalutatum* unſaluted. *Adeo* I go to, *templum* the Church.

h *Inſalutatum*

## The Interjection.

O *Feſtus dies*, O the jovial day, i *hominis* of a man. *Hei* wo, d *mihi* to me.

i *Homo*

*Heu* alas, * *inviſam* k *ſtirpem*! the hated ſtock. *Proh* Oh! l *ſancte Jupiter*! holy Jupiter. *Proh* oh, m *fidem*, the faith, n *Deûm* of the Gods, *&* and, i *hominum* of men.

* *Inviſ.*
k *Stirps*
l *Sanctu*
m *Fides*
n *Dii*

AN

# AN INDEX or TABLE OF

All the Words that are in the Examples of the *ENGLISH RULES*, ſhewing what Parts of Speech they are, and how they are Declined.

A. A.

*A* From, *Ab* from, } Prep.

*Abeo, is, ivi, ire, itum*, to go away, V.N.4.c.

*Abundans, antis.* c.3. abounding, Part 3.c.

*Accerſo, is, ſivi, ſere, ſitum*, to ſend for, V.A.3.c.

*Accipio, is, cepi, cipere, ceptum*, to take, V.A.3.c.

*Ad*, to, prep.

*Adductus, a, um*, moved, part.

*Adipiſcor, eris vel ere, eptus ſum vel fui, adipiſci*, to get V.D.3.c.

*Admiror, aris vel are, atus ſum vel fui, atum*, to wonder at, or admire, V.D.1.c.

*Admiſſus, a, um*, admitted, part.

*Admoneo, es, ui, ere, itum*, to admoniſh, V.A.2.c.

*Æqualis, le*, c.3. equal, N.Adj.

*Affluo, is, xi, ere, xum*, to overthrow, V.N.3.c.

*Ager, gri*, m.g. a field, N.S.2.d.

*Agitur, agebatur, actum eſt*, it is done, V.Imp.3.c.

*Alienus, a, um*, of another, N.Adj.

*Alligo, as, avi, are, atum*, to charge, V.A.1.c.

*Aliquis, qua quid*, ſome body, N.Adj.

*Altus, a, um*, high, N.Adj p.

*Altior*,

*Altior, ius*, c.3. higher, N.Adj.C.
*Altiſſimus, a, um*, very high, N.Adj.S.
*Amandus, a, um*, to be loved, Part.
*Amans, tis*, c.3. loving, N.Adj.P.
*Amantior, ius*, c.3. more loving, N.Adj.C.
*Amantiſſimus, a, um*, very loving, N.Adj.S.
*Amator, oris*, m.g. a lover, N.S.3.d.
*Ambo, æ, o*, plur. both, N.Adj.
*Ambulo, as, avi, are, atum*, to walk, V.N.1.c.
*Amicus, ci*, m.g. a friend, N.S.2.d.
*Amo, as, avi, are, atum*, to love, V.A.1.c.
*Amor, oris*, m.g. the love, N.S.3.d.
*Anglia, æ*, f.g. England, N.S.P.1.d.
*Anima, æ*, f.g. a ſoul, N S.1.d.
*Animus, mi*, m.g. the mind, N.S.2.d.
*Annus, ni*, m.g. a year, N.S.2.d.
*Ante*, before, Prep.
*Apparo, as, avi, are, atum*, to prepare, V.A.1.c.
*Appellor, aris vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to be called, V.P.1.c.
*Appetens, tis*, c.3. deſirous, N.Adj.
*Arbor, oris*, f.g. a tree, N.S.3.d.
*Arcus, cûs*, m.g. a bow, N.S.4.d.
*Argentum, ti*, n.g. ſilver, N.S.2.d.
*Armatus, a, um*, armed, Part.
*Ars, artis*, f.g. skill, N.S.3.d.
*Aſſuefco, ſcis, ſuevi, & ſuetus ſum vel fui, ſcere, ſuctum* to accuſtom, V.N.3.c.
*Athenæ, arum*, plur. f.g. Athens, N.S.P.1.d.
*Audio, is, ivi, ire, itum*, to hear, V.A.4.c.
*Avis, is*, f.g. a bird, N.S.3.d.
*Auris, is*, f.g. an ear, N.S.3.d.
*Aurum, ri*, n.g. gold, N.S.2.d.
*Aut*, or, Conjunct. disjunctive.

B. B.

*Beatus,a,um*, bleſſed, N.Adj.
*Bellum,li*, n.g. war, N.S.2.d.
*Bene*, well, Adv. of quality.
*Beneſit,fiebat,factum eſt, &c.* It is done well, V. Imp. irreg. V.P.
*Bibo,bis,bibi,ere,itum*, to drink, V.N.3.c.
*Bonus,a,um*, good, N.Adj.P.
*Melior,ius*,c.3. better, N.Adj.C.
*Optimus,a,um*, beſt, N.Adj.S.
*Bos,bovis*, c.2. an Ox, N.S.3.d.
*Britannia, æ*, f.g. Britain, N.S.P.1.d.

C. C.

*Cæſar,aris*, m.g. Cæſar, N.S.P.3.d.
*Calamus,mi*, m.g. an arrow, N.S.2.d.
*Calcar,aris*, n.g. a ſpur, N.S.3.d.
*Cano,is,cecini,canere,tum*, to ſing, V.N.3.c.
*Cantabrigia,æ*, f.g. Cambridge, N.S.P.1.d.
*Capio,is,cepi,capere,captum*, to take, V.A.3.c.
*Captivus,vi*, m.g. a priſoner, N.S.2.d.
*Carmen,inis*, n.g. a Song. N.S.3.d.
*Careo, es, ui, & caſſus ſum, carere, caſſum & caritum*, to want, V.N.2.c.
*Carthago,inis*, f.g. N.S.P.3.d.
*Caſtra,orum*, n.g. pl. tents, N.S.2.d.
*Cauſa,æ*, f.g. a caſe, N.S.1.d.
*Cautus,a,um*, wary, N.Adj.
*Centum*, pl. an hundred, N.Adj. indeclined.
*Cernor, eris vel ere, viſus ſum, cerni*, to be ſeen, V. P. 3. c.
*Certatur, abatur, atum eſt, &c.* it is ſtriven, V. N. perſ. 1. c.
*Certè*, ſurely, Adv. of affirming.
*Certus,a,um*, ſure, n.adj.

*Ceſſator*

*Ceſſator, oris*, m.g. a ſluggard, n.S.3.d.
*Cibus, bi*, m.g. food, n.S.2.d.
*Cicero, onis*, m. g. Cicero, n.S.P.3.d.
*Cingulus, li*, m.g. a girdle, n.S.2.d.
*Civitas, atis*, f.g. a City, n.S. 3.d.
*Claudus, a, um*, lame, n.adj.
*Codex, icis*, m.g. a book, n.S. 3.d.
*Cœleſtis, ſte*, c.3. heavenly, n.adj.
*Cœno, as, avi, & atus ſum, are, atum*, to ſup, V.N.1.c.
*Cogito, as, avi, are, atum*, to think, V.N.1.c.
*Colendus*, a, *um*, to be tilled, Part.
*Confero, fers, tuli, ferre, latum*, to go, V.A. irr.
*Conjunctus, a, um*, joyned, Part.
*Conſulo, is, ui, lere, ſultum*, to conſult, V.A.3.c.
*Conſulens, tis*, c.3. conſulting, Part.
*Conſumo, is, ſumere, ſumptum*, to ſpend, V.A.3.c.
*Contentus, a, um*, content, N.Adj.
*Copia, æ*, f.g. plenty, N.S.1.d.
*Corpus, oris*, n.g. a body, N.S.3.d.
*Craſſus, a, um*, thick, N.Adj.
*Crœſus, ſi*, m.g. Crœſus, N.S.P.2.d.
*Crus, cruris*, n.g. a thigh, N.S. 3.d.
*Cubo, as, ui, are, itum*, to lie down, V.N.1.c.
*Cujus, ja, jum*, whoſe, Pron.
*Cultura, ræ*, f.g. ordering, N.S.1.d.
*Cupidus, a, um*, deſirous, N.Adj.
*Cupientiſſimus, a, um*, moſt deſirous, N.Adj.S.
*Cupio, is, ivi, ere, itum*, to deſire, V.n.4.c.
*Currens, tis*, c.3. running, Part.

D. D.

*Damno, as, avi, are, atum*, to condemn, V.A.1.c.
*Damnor, aris vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to be condemned, V.P.1.c.
*Decet, decebat, decuit, &c.* It becometh, V.Imp.2.c.
*Dediſcendus, a, um*, to be unlearned, Part.

*Deductus, a, um*, led, Part.
*Deſeſſus, a, um*, weary, Part.
*Dementia, æ*, f.g. madneſs, N.S.1.d.
*Deterreo, es, ui, ere, itum*, to affright, V.A.2.c.
*Deus*, Dei, m.g. God, N.S.2.d.
*Dico, is, xi, ere, ctum*, to ſay, V.A.3.c.
*Dicor, eris vel ere, ctus, ſum, dici*, to be ſaid, V.P.3.c.
*Dies, diei*, d.g. a day, N.S.5.d.
*Dignitas, atis*, f.g. dignity, N.S.3.d.
*Dignus, a, um*, worthy, N.Adj.
*Dii, deorum*, pl. Gods, N.S.irr.2.d.
*Diligentia, æ*, f.g. diligence, N.S.1.d.
*Diligendus, a, um*, to be beloved, Part.
*Diluculo*, early by break of day, Adv. of time.
*Dis, itis*, c.3. rich, N.Adj.P.
*Ditior, ius*, c.3. more rich, N.Adj.C.
*Ditiſſimus, a, um*, very rich, N.Adj.S.
*Diſcedo, is, ceſſi, ere, ceſſum*, to depart, V.N.3.c.
*Diſco cis, didici, diſcere*, to learn, V.N.3.c.
*Diſto, as, ſtiti, are, ſtitum*, to differ, V.N.1.c.
*Dives, itis*, c.2. rich, N.Adj.
*Divitiæ, arum*, f.g. riches, N.S.1.d.
*Do, das, dedi, dare datum*, to give, V.A.1.c.
*daris vel dare, datus*, to be given, V.P.1.c.
*Doceo, es, ui, ere, doctum*, to teach, V.A.2.c.
*Doctus, a, um*, learned, N.Adj.P.
*Doctior, ius*, c.3. more learned, N.Adj.C.
*Doctiſſimus, a, um*, moſt learned, N.Adj.S.
*Dogma, atis*, n.g. an opinion, N.S.3.d.
*Domus, mi vel mûs*, f.g. a Houſe, N.S.2 & 4.d.
*Dormio, is, ivi, ire, itum*, to ſleep, V.N.4.c.
*Dubius, a, um*, doubtful, N.Adj.
*Duco, is, xi, ere, ctum*, to lead, V.A.3.c.
*Ducor, eris vel ere, ctus ſum, duci*, V.P.3.c.
*Dux, ducis*, c.2. a Captain, N.S.3.d.

E. E.

*Edo, edis, vel es, edi, edere vel eſſe, eſum vel eſtum*, to eat, V.N.irr.3 c.
*Educor, aris vel are, educatus ſum, educari*, to be brought up, V.P.1.c.
*Egeo, es, ui, ere*, to need, V.N.2.c.
*Ego, mei*, I, pron.
*Eloquens, tis*, c.3. Eloquent, N.Adj. p.
*Eloquentior, ius*, c.3. more eloquent, N.Adj.C.
*Eloquentiſſimus, a, um*, very eloquent, N.Adj.S.
*Eloquentia, æ*, f.g. eloquence, N.S.1.d.
*Emo, is, mi, ere, emptum*, to buy, V.A.3.c.
*Emor, eris, vel ere, emptus ſum, emi*, to be bought, V.P. 3. c.
*Endymion, onis*, m.g. Endymion, N.S.P.3.d.
*Enim* for, Conj. Cauſal.
*Enutrior, iris, vel ire, itus ſum vel ſui, iri*, to be brought up, V.P. 4.c.
*Eo, is, ivi, ire, itum*, to go, V.N.4.c.
*Epiſtola, æ*, f.g. a Letter, N.S.1.d.
*Equus, qui*, m.g. a Horſe, N.S.2.d.
*Eripio, is, ui, ere, reptum*, to take away, V.A.3.c.
*Erratum, ti*, n.g. a miſtake, N.S.2.d.
*Et*, and, Conj. Copulative.
*Exeo, is, ivi, ire, itum*, to go out, V.N.4.c.
*Exhortor, aris vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to exhort, V.D. 1.c.
*Exiſtimo, as, avi, are*, to eſteem, V.N.1.c.
*Exoſus, a, um*, hated, parr.
*Expers, tis*, c.3. void, N.Adj.
*Expleo, es, evi, ere, etum*, to fill, V.N. 2.c.
*Extra*, without, prep.
*Exterior, ius*, c.3. more outerly, N.Adj.C.
*Extremus, a, um*, the outmoſt, N.Adj.S.
*Exuo, is, ui, ere, utum*, to put off, V.A.3.c.

F. F.

*Fabula,æ*, f.g. a tale, N.S.1.d.
*Facilis,le*, c.3. eaſie, N.Adj.
*Facile*, eaſily, adv. of quality.
*Facio,is,feci,facere,factum*, to do, V.A.3 c.
*Facundia,æ*, f.g. eloquence, N.S.1.d.
*Fama,æ*, f.g. fame, N.S.1 d.
*Felix,icis*, c.3. happy, N.A.3.d.
*Fœmina,æ*, f.g. a woman, N S.1 d.
*Ferio,is,percuſſi,percuſſum*, to ſtrike, V.N.3.c.
*Ferrum,ri*, n.g. a ſword, N.S.2.d.
*Feſtus,a,um*, jovial, N.Adj.
*Fidens,tis*, c.3. bold, N.Adj.
*Fides,ei*, f.g. faith, N.S.5.d.
*Filius,ii*, m.g. a ſon, N.S.2.d.
*Fio, fis, factus ſum, fieri*, to be made or done, V.N.P. irr.
*Flebilis,le*, c.3. to be lamented, N.Adj.
*Flendus,a,um*, to be lamented, N.Adj.
*Fletur,flebatur,fletum eſt*, &c. V.Imp.2.c.
*Formidabilis,le*, c.3. to be feared, N.Adj.
*Formidandus,a,um*, to be feared, N.Adj.
*Frango gis,fregi,frangere,fractum*, to break, V.A.3.c.
*Frater,ris*, m.g. a brother, N S.3.d.
*Frequens,tis*, c.3. often, N.Adj.3.d.
*Frigidus,a,um*, cold, N.Adj.
*Fruiturus,a,um*, to enjoy, Part 3.c.
*Fugio,is,gi,ere,itum*, to avoid, V.N. 3.c.
*Fugitans,tis*, c.3. avoiding, Part.
*Fundus,di*, m.g. ground, N.S.2.d.
*Furtum,ti*, n.g. theft, N.S.2.d.

G. G.

*Gallia,æ*, f. g. France, N.S.P.1.d.
*Gaudeo,es,gavisus ſum,ere*, to rejoyce, V.N P.2.c.

*Gaudium,ii*, n.g. Joy, N.S. 2.d.
*Gens,tis*, f.g. a Nation, N.S.3.d.
*Glacies,ei*, f.g. ice, N.S. 5d.
*Gladius,ii*, m.g. a ſword, N.S.2d.
*Gloria,æ*, f.g. glory, N.S. 1.d.
*Gnarus,a,um*, skilful, N.Adj.
*Gradus,ûs*, m.g. a ſtep, N.S.4.d.
*Gratia,æ*, f.g. grace. N.S.1.d.

H. H.

H *Abeo,es,ui,ere,itum*, to have, V.A.2.c.
*Habeor,eris vel ere, eri* to be had, V.P.2.c.
*Hector,oris*, m.g. Hector, N.S. 3.d.
*Hei*, wo, Interject. of curſing.
*Herus,ri*, m.g. a Maſter, N.S.2.d.
*Heu*, alas, Interj. of ſorrow.
*Hic,hæc,hoc*, this, Pron.
*Hinc*, hence, Adv. of place.
*Homo,inis*, c.2. a man, N.S.3.d.
*Horatius,ii*, m.g. Horace, n.S.P.2.d.
*Hoſtis,is*, c.2.m.g. an enemy, n.S.3d
*Hujuſmodi*, invar.c.3. of like ſort.
*Humus,mi*, f.g. the ground, n.S.2.d.
*Hyems,emis*, f.g. winter, n.S.3.d.

I. I.

J *Aculum,li*, n.g. a Dart, N.S. 2.d.
*Jaculo,as,avi,are,atum*, to dart, V.N.1.c.
*Jamdudum*, long ſince, Adv. of time.
*Idoneus,a,um*, fit, N.Adj
*Jejunus,a,um*, faſting, N.Adj
*Ignarus,a,um*, ignorant, N Adj.
*Ignis,is*, m g fire, N.S 3.d.
*Ignoſco,is,novi,noſcere,notum*, to pardon, N.V.A 3.c.
*Ille,illa,illud*, that, Pron.
*Imago,inis*, f.g. an Image, N.S.3.d.

*Impedio,ïi,ivi,itum*, to hinder, V.A.4.c.
*Imperator,oris*, m.g. an Emperour, N.S.3.d.
*Imperium,ii*, the Rule, N.S.2.d.
*In*, in, Prep.
*Inanis,e*, c.3. void, N.Adj.
*Incedo,is,ere,ceſſum*, to go, V.A.3.c.
*Incertus,a,um*, uncertain, N. Adj.
*Incipio,is,cepi,ere,ceptum*, to begin, V.A.3.c.
*Indigeo,es,ui,ere*, to need, V.N.2.c.
*Indoctus,a,um*, untaught, N.Adj.
*Indoles,is*, f.g. towardneſs, N.S.3.d.
*Infero,fers,tuli,ferre,latum*, to bring in, V.A.irr.
*Ingenium,ii*, n.g. wit, N.S.2.d.
*Ingredior, eris, vel ere, greſſus ſum, gredi*, to enter in V.D.3.c.
*Inimicus,ci*, m g. an enemy, n.S.2.d.
*Injuria,æ*, f g. an injury, n.S.1.d.
*Innocens,tis*, c.3. innocent, n.Adj.
*Inops,pis*, c.3. poor, n. Adj.
*Inſipiens,tis*, c.3. fooliſh, n. Adj.
*Inſalutatus,a,um*, unſaluted, Part.
*Integer,gra,grum*, upright, N. Adj.
*Inter*, between, Prep.
*Intereſt,erat,fuit*, &c. it concerneth, V.Imperſ.
*Intervallum li*, n.g. a ſpace, n.S.2.d.
*Inviſus,a,um*, hated, part.
*Johannes,nis*, m.g. John, n.S.p. 3.d.
*Ira,æ*, f.g. anger, n.S.1.d.
*Is,ea,id*, that, Pron.
*Italia,æ*, f.g. Italy, n.S.p. 1.d.
*Jubeo,es,juſſi,bere,ſſum*, V.A. 2.c.
*Jucundus,a,um*, pleaſant, n. Adj.
*Judicium,ii*, n.g. judgment, n.S.2.d.
*Julius,lii*, m.g. Julius, n.S.p. 2.d.
*Juxta*, alike, Adv.

L. L.

*Labor, oris*, m.g. labour, n.ſ.3.d.
*Laboro, as, avi, are, atum*, to labour, v.a.1.c.
*Lac, ctis*, n.g. milk, n.ſ.3.d.
*Largior, iris vel ire, itus ſum, iri*, to beſtow, v.a.4.c.
*Latus, a, um*, broad, n.adj.
*Laudatus, a, um*, praiſed, part.
*Laudor, aris vel are, laudatus ſum, ari*, to be praiſed, V.P.1.c.
*Laus, dis*, f.g. praiſe, n.ſ.3.d.
*Lectio, onis*, f.g. a Leſſon, n.ſ.3.d.
*Lego, is, legi, legere, lectum*, to read, v.a.3.c.
*Legor, eris vel ere, lectus ſum, legi*, to be read, v.p.3.c.
*Levo, as, avi, are, atum*, to eaſe, v.a.1.c.
*Liber, bri*, m.g. a book, n.ſ.2.d.
*Licet, ebat, licuit*, &c. it is lawful, v.imperſ.2.c.
*Lis, litis*, f.g. ſtrife, n.ſ.3.d.
*Litera, æ*, f.g. a Letter, n.ſ.1.d.
*Literæ, arum*, f.g. an Epiſtle, n.ſ. 1 d.
*Literarius, a, um*, belonging to letters, n.adj.
*Locus, ci*, m.g. a place, n.ſ.2.d.
*Londinum, ni*, n.g. London, n.ſ.p.2.d.
*Longè*, far, Adv. of place.
*Loquor, eris vel ere, quutus ſum, qui*, to ſpeak, V.D.3.c.
*Lucè*, by day, Adv. of time.
*Lucrum, cri*, n.g. gain, n.ſ.2.d.
*Ludificor, aris vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to mock, V.D.1.c.
*Ludus, di*, m.g. play, n.ſ.2.d.
*Ludus literarius*, a School, n.ſ. & adj. 2.d.
*Lutetia, æ*, f.g. Paris, n.ſ.p.1.d.
*Lux, cis*, f.g. Light, n.ſ.3.d.

M. M.

*Magiſter, ſtri*, m.g. a Maſter, n.ſ.2.d.
*Magnus, a, um*, great, n.a.p.
*Major, jus*, c.3. greater, N.Adj.C.

*Maximus, a, um*, the greateſt, N.Adj.S.
*Malus, a, um*, bad, N.Adj.P.
*Pejor, jus*, worſe, N.Adj C.
*Peſſimus, a, um*, the worſt, N.Adj.S.
*Malum, li*, n g. evil, N.Adj put ſubſtantively.
*Malo, vis, lui, malle*, to be more willing, V. irr.
*Mandens, tis*, c.3 eating, Part.
*Maurus, ri*, a Moor, N.S.P. 2.d.
*Meio, is, minxi, meiere, mictum*, to piſs, V.A.c.3.
*Melius*, better, adv. of quality.
*Meminì, iſti, it*, to remember, &c. V. defective.
*Memor, oris*, c.3. mindful, N. Adj.
*Mens, tis*, f.g. a mind, N.S.3.d.
*Mentior, iris vel ire, itus ſum, iri*, to lye, V.D.4 c.
*Mercor, aris vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to buy, V.D.1.c.
*Metus, ûs*, m.g. fear, N.S.4.d.
*Meus, a, um*, my, Pronoun.
*Militia, æ*, f.g. warfare, N.S.1.d.
*Milito, as, avi, are, atum*, to go to war, V.N.1.c.
*Mina, æ*, f g. a pound, N.S.1.d.
*Miniùs* leſs, adv. of quality.
*Miſer, a, um*, wretched, N.Adj.
*Miſereor, eris vel ere, ertus ſum, eri*, to have pity, V.D. 2. c.
*Miſeret, miſerebat, miſertum eſt, vel miſeritum eſt, &c.* it pitieth, V.Imperſ.2.c.
*Miſereſcit, miſereſcebat, miſertum eſt, vel miſeritum eſt, &c.* it beginneth to pity, V.Imperſ.3.c.
*Mollis, le*, c.3. ſoft, N.Adj.P.
*Mollior, ius*, c.3. ſofter, N Adj.C.
*Molliſſimus, a, um*, ſofteſt, N.Adj.S.
*Multum, ti*, n.g. much, N.Adj. put ſubſtantively.
*Multùm*, much, adv. of quantity.
*Multus, a, um*, much, N.Adj.
*Mula, æ*, f.g. a Mule, N.S.1.d.

N. N.

*Narro, as, avi, are, atum*, to tell, V.A.1 c.
*Naſcor, eris vel ere, natus ſum, naſci*, to be born, V.D. 3. c.
*Natus, a, um*, born, Part.
*Natu*, by birth, Abl. *ab hoc natu*, Monopt.
*Ne*, leſt, Conjunct. Cauſ.
*Nec*, neither, Conjunct. Copul.
*Negligentia, æ*, f.g. negligence, N.S.1.d.
*Negligo, is, lexi, ligere, lectum*, to neglect, V.A.3 c.
*Negotium, tii*, n.g. Buſineſs, N.S.2.d.
*Nemo, Gen. caret, Dat. nemini, &c.* c.2. No body, N.S.3.d.
*Nihil, indec.* n g. nothing, N. *S.*
*Niſi*, except, Conjunct.
*Nobilitas, atis*, f. g. Nobleneſs, N.*S.*3 d.
*Nolo, nonvis, nolui, nolle*, to be unwilling, V irr.
*Non*, not, Adv. of denying.
*Nondum*, not yet, Adv. of time.
*Nonnullus, a, um*, ſome, N.Adj.
*Noſco, ſcis, novi, noſcere, notum*, to know, V.A.3.c.
*Noſter, ſtra, ſtrum*, ours, Pron.
*Nox, noctis*, night, f. g. N.*S.*3.d.
*Nullus, a, um*, none, N Adj.
*Nummus, mi*, m g. money, N.*S.*2.d.
*Nunc*, now, Adv. of time.
*Nuncius, ii*, m.g. a Meſſenger, N.*S.*2.d.
*Nunquam*, never, Adv. of time.

O. O.

*Ob* for, Prep.
*Oblatus, a, um*, offered, Part.
*Obliviſcor, eris vel ere, itus ſum, ſci*, to forget, V.d.3.c.
*Obviam*, on the way, adv.
*Occido, is, cidi, ere, ciſum*, to kill, V.A.3.c.
*Omnis, ne*, c.3. all, N.Adj.
*Onero as, avi, are, atum*, to loaden, V.A.1.c.

*Onus, eris*, n.g. a burden, N.S.3.d.
*Opes, um*, f.g. wealth, N.S 3.d.
*Oportet, oportebat*, &c. it behoveth, V.Imperſ.2.c.
*Opus, eris*, n g. a work, N.S.3 d.
*Opus*, n.g. need, N.S. indec.
*Orans, tis*, c.3. praying, Part.
*Orator, ris*, m.g. an Orator, N.S.3.d.
*Otioſus, a, um*, idle, N.Adj.
*Otium, tii*, n.g. Idleneſs, N.S.2.d.
*Oxonia, æ*, f.g. Oxford, N.S.P.1.d.

P. P.

P*Arco, is, peperci, & parſi, ere*, to ſpare, V.N.3.c.
*Parcitur, ebatur*, it is ſpared, V.Imperſ.3.c.
*Parens, tis*, c.2. a father or mother, N.S.3. d.
*Pariſii, orum*, m.g. Paris, N.S.Pr.2.d.
*Pars, partis*, f.g. a part, N.S.3.d.
*Parvus, a, um*, little, N.Adj.
*Paſſer, eris*, m.g. a Sparrow, N.S.3.d.
*Pater, tris*, m.g. a Father, N.S 3.d.
*Patior, eris vel ere, paſſus ſum, pati*, to ſuffer, V.D.3.c.
*Paucus, a, um*, few, N.Adj.
*Paulus, a, um*, little, N Adj.
*Pax, pacis*, f.g. peace, N.S.3.d.
*Pectus, oris*, n.g. the breaſt, N.S.3.d.
*Pecunia, æ*, f.g. Money, N.S.1.d.
*Pendor, eris vel ere, penſus ſum, pendi*, to be eſteemed, V.P.3.c.
*Percutio, is, cuſſi, cutere, cuſſum*, to ſtrike, V.A.3.c.
*Periclitor, aris vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to be in jeopardy, V.D.1.c.
*Periculum, li*, n.g. danger, N.S.2.d.
*Peritus, a, um*, Expert, N.Adj.
*Pertæſus, a, um*, weary, Part.
*Pes, pedis*, m.g. a foot, N.S. 3.d.

*Peto,is,ivi,ere,itum*, to desire, V.A.3.c.
*Petor,eris vel ere,itus sum,peti*, to be desired, v.p.3.c.
*Petrus,tri*, m.g. Peter, N.S.P.3.d.
*Pignus,oris*, n.g. a pledge, N.S.3.d.
*Pila,æ*, f.g. a Ball, N.S.1.d.
*Placeo,es,ui,ere,itum*, to please, v.a.2.c.
*Plato,onis*, m.g. Plato, N.S.P.3.d.
*Plenus,a,um*, full, N.Adj.
*Pœnitet,ebat*, &c. It repenteth, V.Imp.2.c.
*Poeta,æ*, m.g. a Poet, N.S.1.d.
*Pollex,icis*, m.g. an inch, N.S.3.d.
*Positus,a,um*, placed, Part.
*Possum,potes,potui,posse*, to may or can, V.Imp.
*Potior,iris vel ire, itus sum, iri*, to enjoy, V.D.4.c.
*Poto,as,avi, & potus sum, are,atum*, to drink, v.N.1.c.
*Præceptor,oris*, m.g. a master, N.S.3.d.
*Præfero, fers, tuli, ferre, latum*, to prefer, v. irr.
*Præsidium,ii*, n.g. a safeguard, N.S.2.d.
*Prætereo,is,ivi,ire,itum*, to pass by, v.N.4.c.
*Præteritus,a,um*, passed by, Part.
*Precor,aris vel are,atus sum,ari*, to pray, v.D.1.c.
*Pridem*, long ago, Adv.
*Prior,us*, c.3. the former, N.Adj.c.
*Primus,a,um*, the first, N.Adj.S.
*Primùm*, first, Adv.
*Princeps,cipis*, c.2. N.S.3.d. a Prince,
*Probitas,atis*, f.g. Honesty, N.S.3.d.
*Procedo,is,cessi,cedere,cessum*, to go on, v.N.3.c.
*Procumbo, is, cubui, cumbere, cubitum*, to lie down, V.N. 3.c.
*Proficiscor,ceris vel cere,fectus, sum, sci*, V.D.3.c.
*Promptus,a,um*, ready, N.Adj.
*Prope*, near, Prep.P.
*Propiùs*, nearer, Adv c.
*Proximè*, next, adv.S.
*Proprius,a,um*, proper, N.Adj.

*Propter*, for, Prepoſ.
*Pudet, ebat, &c.* it aſhameth, V.Imperſ.2.c.
*Puer, eri*, m.g. a Boy, N.S.2.d.
*Puerit ia, æ*, f.g. Childhood.
*Purus, a, um*, pure, N.adj.
*Puto, as, avi, are, atum.* to think, V.A.1.c.

Q. Q.

*Qualis, le*, c.3. what like, N.adj.
*Quantus, a, um*, how great, N.adj.
*Quàm*, as, Adv. of Compariſon.
*Que*, and, Conjunct.
*Qui, quæ, quod*, which, Pron.
*Quidam, quædam, quoddam*, ſome one, Pron.
*Quis, quæ, quid*, who, Pron.
*Quiſquam, quæquam, quicquam*, any one, Pron.
*Quòd* that, Conjunct.
*Quoquè* alſo Conjunct.

R. R.

*Rarus, a, um*, ſeldom, N.Adj.P.
*Rarior, ius*, c.3. more ſeldom, N.Adj.C.
*Rariſſimus, a, um*, very ſeldom, N.Adj.S.
*Recipio, is, cepi, cipere, ceptum*, to receive, V.A.3.c.
*Recordor, aris, vel are, atus ſum, ari*, to call to mind, V.D.1.c.
*Redimo, is, emi, imere, emptum*, to redeem, V.A.3.c.
*Redintegratio, onis*, f.g. a renewing, N.S.3.d.
*Referor, ferris vel ferre, latus ſum, ferri* to be brought back, V.P.irr.
*Refert, ferebat, tulit, &c.* it mattereth. V.Imp.irr.
*Regina, æ*, f.g. a Queen, N.S.1.d.
*Repetundarum, is*, Bribery, N.S.1.d.Dipt.
*Res, rei*, f.g. a thing, N.S.5.d.
*Reſpuo, is, ui, ere, utum*, to refuſe, V.N.3.c.
*Reus, a, um*, accuſed, N.Adj.

*Rever-*

*Revertor, eris vel ere, versus sum, verti,* to return, V. P. 3.c.
*Rex, regis,* m.g. a King, N.S.3.d.
*Risus, ûs,* m.g. Laughter, N.S.4.d.
*Robur, oris,* n.g. an Oak, N.S.3.d.
*Rogo, as, avi, are, atum,* to ask, V.A.1.c.
*Roma, æ,* f.g. Rome, N.S.P.1.d.
*Romanus, a, um,* Roman, n.adj.
*Rus, ruris,* n.g. the Country, n.S.3.d.

S. S.

*Sæpe,* Often, adv. of time.
*Sævitia,* f.g. Cruelty, n.S.1.d.
*Saluber, bris, bre,* c.3. wholsom, n.adj.P.
*Saluberior, us,* c.3. more wholsom, n.adj.C.
*Saluberrimus, a, um,* very wholesome, n.adj.S.
*Salutor, aris vel are, atus sum, ari,* to be saluted, V.P.1.c.
*Sanctus, a, um,* Holy, n.adj.
*Sapio, is, ui, & ivi, ere, pitum,* to be wise, V.n.3.c.
*Satago, is, egi, agere, actum,* to be busie, V.n.3.c.
*Satis,* enough, adv. of quality.
*Scribo, is, psi, ere, ptum,* to write, V.A.3.c.
*Scelus, eris,* n.g. wickedness, n.S.3.d.
*Scio, is, scivi, scire, scitum,* to know, V.A.4.c.
*Securus, a, um,* careless, n.adj.
*Sed,* but, Conjunct.
*Sententia, æ,* f.g. a Saying, n.S.1.d.
*Sentio, tis, si, tire, sum,* to perceive, V.A.4.c.
*Sexaginta,* c.3. threescore, n.adj.inv.pl.
*Sinister, stra, strum,* the left, n. adj.
*Similis, le,* c.3. like, n.adj.
*Similiter,* like, adv. of quality.
*Somnio, as, avi, are, atum,* to dream, V.N.1.c.
*Somnus, ni,* m.g. sleep, n.S.2.d.
*Sordidus, a, um,* base, n.adj.P.
*Sordidior, us,* more base, n.adj.C.
*Sordidissimus, a, um,* most base, n.adj.S.

*Spectо,as,avi,are,atum*, to behold, V.A.1.c.
*Spolio,as,avi,are,atum*, to plunder, V.A.1.c.
*Statuo,is,ui,ere,utum*, to appoint, V.A.3 c.
*Stans,tis*, c.3. ſtanding, Part.
*Sterto,is,ui,ere*, to ſnort, V.A.3.c.
*Stomachus,chi*, m.g. the ſtomach, n.ſ.2.d.
*Stirps,pis*, f.g. a ſtock, n.ſ.3.d.
*Studeo,es,ui,ere,itum*, to ſtudy, V.N.2.c.
*Studetur,ebatur,itum eſt*, &c. V.Imperſ.2.c.
*Studium,ii*, n.g. ſtudy, n.ſ.2.d.
*Stultus,a,um*, fooliſh, n.adj.
*Sublevo,as,avi,are,atum*, to help, V.A.1.c.
*Subtrahо,is,traxi,ere,tractum*, to withdraw, V.A.3.c.
*Sui,ſibi*, of himſelf, Pron.
*Sum,es,fui,eſſe*, to be, V.N. irr.
*Superо,as,avi,are,atum*, to overcome, V.A.1.c.
*Superſum,es,fui,eſſe*, to be over and above, v.n.irr.
*Supinus,a,um*, Careleſs, n.adj.
*Supplex,plicis*, c.3. ſuppliant, n.adj.
*Supra*, above, Prep.
*Superior,us*, c.3. higher, n.adj.c.
*Supremus,a,um,vel ſummus,a,um*, the higheſt, n.adj.ſ.
*Surgo,is,rexi,gere,rectum*, to riſe, V.n.3.c.
*Suus,a,um*, his, pron.

T. T.

*Taceo,es,ui,ere,itum*, to hold ones peace, v.n.2.c.
*Tædet,ebat*, &c. it irketh, v.Imperſ.
*Talis,le*, c.3. ſuch, n.adj.
*Tantus,a,um*, ſo great, n.adj.
*Templum,pli*, n.g. the Temple, n.ſ.2.d.
*Tempore*, in time, Adv.
*Tempus,oris*, n.g. time, n.ſ.3.d.
*Teneo,es,ui,ere,tentum*, to hold, v.A.2.c.
*Thymus,mi*, m.g. Thyme, n.ſ.2.d.
*Totus,a,um*, whole, n.adj.

*Tres, tria*, c.3. pl. three, adj.
*Tu, tui*, thou, Pron.
*Tuipſe, tuiipſius*, thou thy ſelf, Pron.
*Tunc*, then, Adv.
*Turris, is*, f.g. a Tower, N.S.3 d.
*Turpis, e*, c.3. filthy, N.Adj.
*Tutus, a, um*, ſafe, N Adj.
*Tuus, a, um*, thine, Pron.

V. V.

*Vacuus, a, um*, void, N.Adj.
*Valeo, es, ui, ere*, to be able, V.N.2.c.
*ubique*, every where, Adv.
*Vendo, is, didi, ere*, to ſell, V.A.3.c.
*Venio, is, veni, tum*, to come, V.N.4.c.
*Vereor, eris vel ere, veritus ſum, eri*, to be afraid, V.D. 2. c.
*Verto, is, ti, ere, verſum*, to turn, V.A.3.c.
*Veſperi*, in the evening, Adv.
*Veſter, ſtra, ſtrum*, yours, Pron.
*Veſtis, is*, f.g. a garment, N.S.3.d.
*Vicinus, ni*, m.g. a neighbour, N.S.2.d.
*Video, es, di, ere, viſum*, to ſee, V.A.2.c.
*Vigilo, as, avi, are, atum*, to watch, V.N.1.c.
*Vigilans, tis*, c.3. watching, part.
*Viginti*, c.3. pl. twenty N. indecl.
*Vinum, ni*, n.g. wine, N.S.2.d.
*Vinco, cis, vici, vintere, victum*, to overcome, V.A.3.c.
*Vir, viri*, m.g. a man, N.S.2.d.
*Virgilius, ii*, Virgil, N.S.P.2.d.
*Virtus, tutis*, f.g. virtue, N.S.3.d.
*Vis, vis*, f.g. force, N.S.3.d.
*Viſo, is, ſi, ſere, ſum*, to viſit, V.N.3.c.
*Vita, æ*, life, N.S.1.d.
*Vitium, tii*, n.g. vice, N.S.2.d.

*Vive*

*Vivo, is, xi, ere, ctum*, to live, V.N.3.c.
*Unus, a, um*, one, N.Adj.
*Vocor, aris, vel are, atus sum, ari*, to be called, v.p.1.c.
*Volo, vis, volui, velle*, to will, v.n.irr.
*Voluptas, atis*, f.g. pleasure, N.S.3.d.
*Votum, ti*, n.g. a desire, N.S.2.d.
*Urbs, bis*, f.g. a City, N.S.3.d.
*Usus, ûs*, m.g. Use, N.S.4.d.
*Ut*, that, Conjunct.
*Uter, tra, trum*, whether, N.Adj.
*Utilis, le*, c.3. profitable, N.Adj.
*Utor, eris, vel ere, usus sum, uti*, to use v.d.3.c.
*Utrùm*, whether, adv.

X. X.

*Xenophon, ontis*, m.g. Xenophon, N.S.3.d.

BRITISH
8 AU 89
MUSEUM

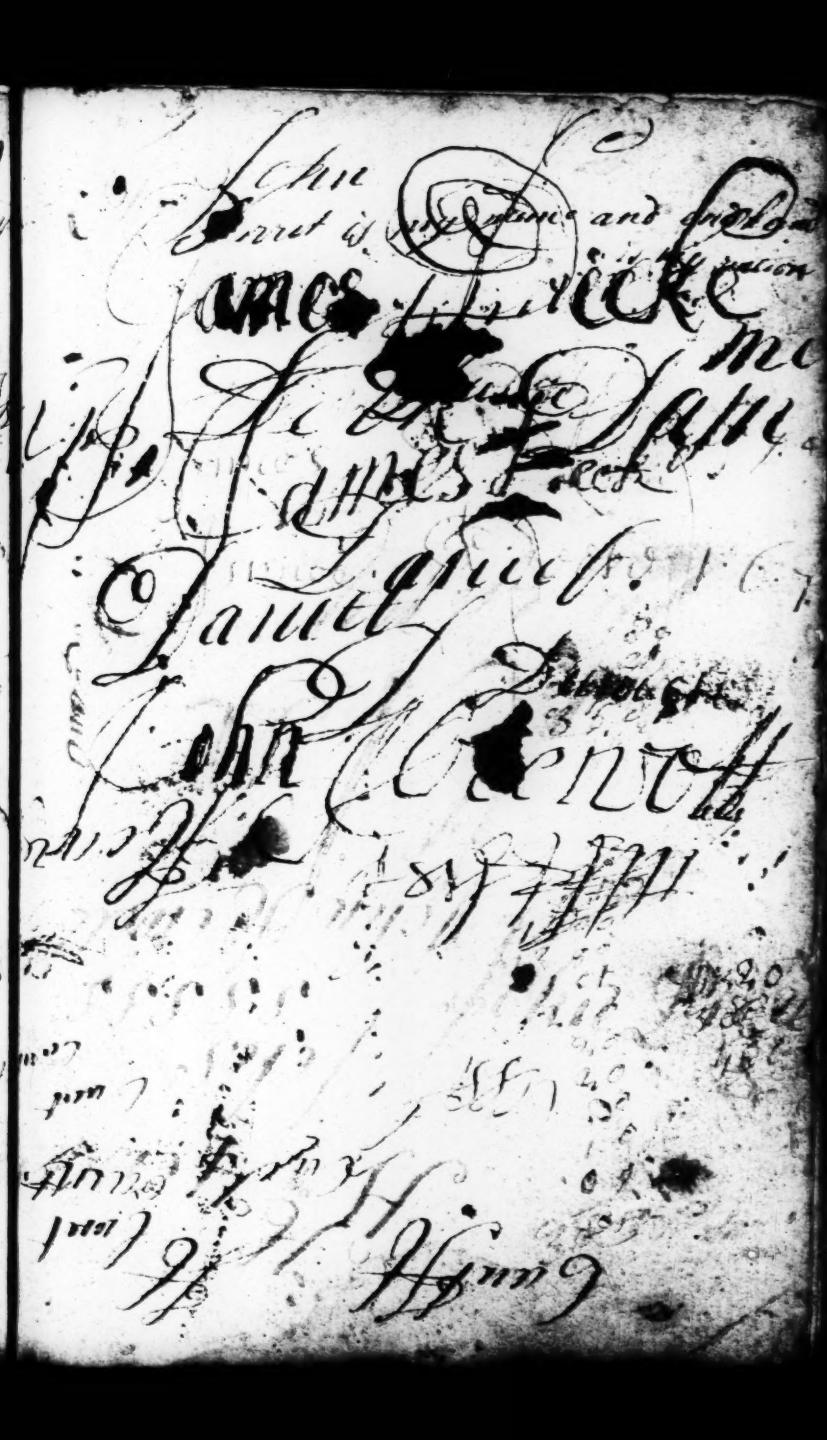
FINIS.

John Bert

Curtis

# Hools

## Accidence and Terminations



Hallinges
John